

Lattice paths and branched continued fractions:

An infinite sequence of generalizations of the Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers polynomials, with coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity

Mathias Pétréolle¹, Alan D. Sokal^{1,2}, Bao-Xuan Zhu^{3,1}

¹Department of Mathematics, University College London, London WC1E 6BT, UK

²Department of Physics, New York University, New York, NY 10003, USA

³School of Mathematical Sciences, Jiangsu Normal University, Xuzhou 221116, CHINA

`mathias.petreolle@gmail.com, sokal@nyu.edu, bxzhu@jsnu.edu.cn`

July 9, 2018

Abstract

We define an infinite sequence of generalizations, parametrized by an integer $m \geq 1$, of the Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers polynomials; they arise as the power-series expansions of some branched continued fractions, and as the generating polynomials for m -Dyck and m -Schröder paths with height-dependent weights. We prove that all of these sequences of polynomials are coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in all the (infinitely many) indeterminates. We then apply this theory to prove the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity for combinatorially interesting sequences of polynomials. Enumeration of unlabeled ordered trees and forests gives rise to multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials and Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions. Enumeration of increasing (labeled) ordered trees and forests gives rise to multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions, which include the univariate m th-order Eulerian polynomials as specializations. We also find branched continued fractions for ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ for arbitrary r and s , which generalize Gauss’ continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$; and for $s = 0$ we prove the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity. Finally, we extend the branched continued fractions to ratios of contiguous basic hypergeometric series ${}_r\phi_s$.

Key Words: Dyck path, m -Dyck path, Schröder path, m -Schröder path, Motzkin path, Łukasiewicz path, Catalan numbers, Fuss–Catalan numbers, Schröder num-

bers, continued fraction, S-fraction, T-fraction, J-fraction, branched continued fraction, Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, Thron–Rogers polynomials, Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, production matrix, totally positive matrix, total positivity, Hankel matrix, Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma, Stieltjes moment problem, Fuss–Narayana polynomial, Fuss–Narayana symmetric function, Eulerian polynomial, Eulerian symmetric function, Stirling permutation, hypergeometric series, basic hypergeometric series, contiguous relation.

Mathematics Subject Classification (MSC 2010) codes: 05A15 (Primary); 05A19, 05A20, 05C30, 05E05, 15B05, 15B48, 30B70, 30E05, 33C05, 33C20, 33D05, 44A60 (Secondary).

Contents

1	Introduction	5
2	The m-Stieltjes–Rogers and m-Thron–Rogers polynomials	10
2.1	Dyck paths	10
2.2	Schröder paths	13
2.3	m -Dyck paths	15
2.4	m -Schröder paths	19
2.5	Some further remarks	22
3	Relation between different values of m	24
4	The m-Jacobi–Rogers polynomials	26
5	The generalized m-Stieltjes–Rogers, m-Thron–Rogers and m-Jacobi–Rogers polynomials	28
6	The generalized m-Jacobi–Rogers polynomials in terms of ordered trees and forests	30
7	Contraction formulae for m-branched continued fractions	32
7.1	Generalization of even contraction	32
7.2	Generalization of odd contraction	36
8	Production matrices	37
8.1	General theory of production matrices	37
8.2	Production matrices for generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials	38

9	Total positivity	39
9.1	Preliminaries concerning partially ordered commutative rings and total positivity	40
9.2	Production matrices and total positivity	41
9.3	Statement of results for m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials	43
9.4	Combinatorial proofs using Lindström–Gessel–Viennot	45
9.5	Algebraic proofs using production matrices	50
10	Weights periodic of period $m+1$ or m	51
10.1	Period $m+1$: Solving the recurrence	52
10.2	Period m : Solving the recurrence	58
10.3	Combinatorial interpretations of the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials	61
10.3.1	Fuss–Narayana polynomials of positive type: $(m+1)$ -ary trees	61
10.3.2	Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type: Multi- m -ary trees	64
10.3.3	Noncrossing partitions	65
10.3.4	Parking functions	67
10.4	Period $m+1$: Production-matrix method	67
10.5	Period $m+1$: Row-generating polynomials	70
11	Weights eventually periodic of period $m+1$ or m	73
11.1	Period $m+1$	73
11.2	Period m	74
12	Weights quasi-affine or factorized of period $m+1$ or m	75
12.1	Multifactorials	78
12.2	Period $m+1$: Increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees	79
12.2.1	Multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions: Definitions and statement of results	80
12.2.2	Extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions: Definitions and statement of results	85
12.2.3	Proof by bijection to labeled lattice paths	87
12.2.4	Proof by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method	94
12.3	Period m : Increasing multi- m -ary trees	98
12.3.1	Multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type: Definitions and statement of results	98
12.3.2	Extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type: Definitions and statement of results	101
12.3.3	Proof by bijection to labeled lattice paths	103
12.3.4	Proof by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method	104
12.4	A final observation	108
12.5	Stirling permutations and r th-order Eulerian polynomials	108
13	Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series I: ${}_{m+1}F_0$	111

14 Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series II: ${}_rF_s$	116
14.1 Three-term contiguous relations for general ${}_rF_s$	117
14.2 Branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$	118
14.3 Branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s	119
14.4 Branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$	123
14.5 Branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s	124
14.6 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_0F_m$	127
14.7 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_mF_m$	128
14.8 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s	130
15 Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series III: ${}_r\phi_s$	133
15.1 Branched continued fraction for ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}\phi_m$	134
16 Some final remarks	135
16.1 A conjecture on higher-order Genocchi numbers and Gandhi polynomials	135
16.2 Limitations of our method	136
Bibliography	137

1 Introduction

In a seminal 1980 paper, Flajolet [51] showed that the coefficients in the Taylor expansion of the generic Stieltjes-type (resp. Jacobi-type) continued fraction — which he called the *Stieltjes–Rogers* (resp. *Jacobi–Rogers*) *polynomials* — can be interpreted as the generating polynomials for Dyck (resp. Motzkin) paths with specified height-dependent weights. Very recently it was independently discovered by several authors [61, 84, 111, 140] that Thron-type continued fractions also have an interpretation of this kind: namely, their Taylor coefficients — which we shall call, by analogy, the *Thron–Rogers polynomials* — can be interpreted as the generating polynomials for Schröder paths with specified height-dependent weights. (All this will be explained in more detail in Section 2 below.)

The purpose of the present paper is to present an infinite sequence of generalizations of the Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers polynomials: these generalizations are parametrized by an integer $m \geq 1$ and reduce to the classical Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers polynomials when $m = 1$; they are the generating polynomials of m -Dyck and m -Schröder paths, respectively, with height-dependent weights. One fundamental feature of these generalizations is that they all possess the property of coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity [139, 140], jointly in all the (infinitely many) indeterminates. We will give two proofs of this fact: a combinatorial proof based on the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma, and an algebraic proof based on the theory of production matrices.¹ These facts were known when $m = 1$ [139, 140] but are new when $m > 1$. By specializing the indeterminates we can give many examples of Hankel-totally positive sequences whose generating functions do not possess nice classical continued fractions. (The concept of Hankel-total positivity [139, 140] will be explained in more detail later in this Introduction.)

In a similar way we will generalize the Jacobi–Rogers polynomials to m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. Just as when $m = 1$ [139, 140], these polynomials are *not* in general Hankel-totally positive — in contrast to the Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers cases — but they do provide a useful framework. In particular, the standard formulae for the contraction of an S-fraction to a J-fraction [159, p. 21] [157, p. V-31] have simple generalizations in which the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials (and also some specializations of the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials) can be rewritten as m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with suitably “contracted” weights.

We will furthermore introduce triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, whose first columns are given by the ordinary m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, respectively. In the Stieltjes and Thron cases, these triangular arrays turn out also to be coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in all the indeterminates. We will again give two proofs of this fact: one combinatorial and one algebraic.²

Just as the classical Stieltjes–Rogers, Thron–Rogers and Jacobi–Rogers poly-

¹More precisely, the combinatorial proof will apply to both the Stieltjes and Thron cases, while the algebraic proof will apply to the Stieltjes case and to a *subclass* of the Thron case.

²With the same clarification as in footnote 1.

mials can be interpreted as the Taylor coefficients of Stieltjes-type, Thron-type or Jacobi-type continued fractions, respectively, so the m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials can be interpreted as the Taylor coefficients of certain branched continued fractions. But these branched continued fractions seem very difficult to work with, and we will not make much use of them. (It would, however, be an interesting project for someone interested in the analytic theory of continued fractions [34, 83, 100, 116, 159] to study the convergence properties of our branched continued fractions when the variable t lies in the complex plane.)

Let us now explain in more detail the context of this work [139, 140], which is basically combinatorial and linear-algebraic but is strongly motivated by a classical branch of analysis: the Stieltjes moment problem [5, 130, 134, 136, 154]. Recall first that a (finite or infinite) matrix of real numbers is called *totally positive* (TP) if all its minors are nonnegative, and *strictly totally positive* (STP) if all its minors are strictly positive.³ Background information on totally positive matrices can be found in [50, 62, 85, 119]; they have applications to combinatorics [22–24, 58, 137], stochastic processes [85, 86], statistics [85], the mechanics of oscillatory systems [62, 63], the zeros of polynomials and entire functions [11, 43, 81, 85, 87, 119], spline interpolation [64, 85, 131], Lie theory [57, 102–104] and cluster algebras [55, 56], the representation theory of the infinite symmetric group [21, 155], the theory of immanants [152], planar discrete potential theory [33, 54] and the planar Ising model [99], and several other areas of pure and applied mathematics [64].

Now let $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ be a sequence of real numbers, and let $H_\infty(\mathbf{a}) = (a_{i+j})_{i,j \geq 0}$ be its associated infinite Hankel matrix. More generally, for each $m \geq 0$, let $H_\infty^{(m)}(\mathbf{a}) = (a_{i+j+m})_{i,j \geq 0}$ be the m -shifted infinite Hankel matrix. The fundamental fact about total positivity of Hankel matrices is the following:

Theorem 1.1 (Stieltjes–Gantmakher–Krein). *For a sequence $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ of real numbers, the following are equivalent:*

- (a) $H_\infty^{(0)}(\mathbf{a})$ is totally positive. [That is, all the minors of $H_\infty^{(0)}(\mathbf{a})$ are nonnegative.]
- (b) Both $H_\infty^{(0)}(\mathbf{a})$ and $H_\infty^{(1)}(\mathbf{a})$ are positive-semidefinite. [That is, all the principal minors of $H_\infty^{(0)}(\mathbf{a})$ and $H_\infty^{(1)}(\mathbf{a})$ are nonnegative.]
- (c) There exists a positive measure μ on $[0, \infty)$ such that $a_n = \int x^n d\mu(x)$ for all $n \geq 0$. [That is, \mathbf{a} is a Stieltjes moment sequence.]
- (d) There exist numbers $\alpha_0, \alpha_1, \dots \geq 0$ such that

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n = \frac{\alpha_0}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (1.1)$$

³**Warning:** Many authors (e.g. [50, 58, 62, 63]) use the terms “totally nonnegative” and “totally positive” for what we have termed “totally positive” and “strictly totally positive”, respectively. So it is very important, when seeing any claim about “totally positive” matrices, to ascertain which sense of “totally positive” is being used. (This is especially important because many theorems in this subject require *strict* total positivity for their validity.)

in the sense of formal power series. [That is, the ordinary generating function $f(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n$ can be represented as a Stieltjes-type continued fraction with nonnegative coefficients.]

Here (a) \implies (b) is trivial; (b) \iff (c) is the standard necessary and sufficient condition for a Stieltjes moment sequence [5, 130, 134, 136, 154]; (c) \iff (d) is due to Stieltjes [154] in 1894; and (c) \implies (a) is due to Gantmakher and Krein [63] in 1937.

So every Stieltjes moment sequence has a continued-fraction expansion (1.1) with nonnegative coefficients α . For some Stieltjes moment sequences these coefficients are “nice”, but for others they look horrendous. For instance, $n! = \int_0^{\infty} x^n e^{-x} dx$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence, and Euler [48] showed in 1746 that⁴

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n! t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \dots}}}}} , \quad (1.2)$$

i.e. it has a continued fraction (1.1) with coefficients $\alpha_0 = 1$ and $\alpha_{2k-1} = \alpha_{2k} = k$ for $k \geq 1$. Now the entrywise product of two Stieltjes moment sequences is easily seen to be a Stieltjes moment sequence; in particular, any positive-integer entrywise power of a Stieltjes moment sequence is a Stieltjes moment sequence. So $((n!)^2)_{n \geq 0}$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence; therefore its ordinary generating function has a continued fraction (1.1) with nonnegative coefficients. Straightforward computation gives

$$\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots = 1, 3, \frac{20}{3}, \frac{164}{15}, \frac{3537}{205}, \frac{127845}{5371}, \frac{4065232}{124057}, \frac{244181904}{5868559}, \frac{38418582575}{721944303}, \dots \quad (1.3)$$

Perhaps the reader can see a pattern in these coefficients, but we, alas, cannot!⁵ Likewise, any arithmetic-progression subsequence of a Stieltjes moment sequence is a Stieltjes moment sequence; thus, for instance, $((2n)!)_{n \geq 0}$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence. Its continued-fraction expansion has

$$\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots = 2, 10, \frac{108}{5}, \frac{596}{15}, \frac{27250}{447}, \frac{1448550}{16241}, \frac{351090488}{2923925}, \frac{25537748648}{161245075}, \frac{35020650343950}{176040604499}, \dots , \quad (1.4)$$

which looks, if anything, a bit worse.

Here we will show that although $(n!)^2$ and $(2n)!$ have ugly classical continued fractions, they have nice m -branched continued fractions with $m = 2$: the coefficients are, respectively,

$$\alpha = 1, 1, 2, 4, 4, 6, 9, 9, 12, \dots \quad (1.5)$$

⁴The paper [48], which is E247 in Eneström’s [47] catalogue, was probably written circa 1746; it was presented to the St. Petersburg Academy in 1753, and published in 1760.

⁵And, at least as far as we checked, neither can `gfun` [129].

(corresponding to products of successive pairs of the “pre-alphas” $\alpha^{\text{pre}} = 1, 1, 1, 2, 2, 2, 3, 3, 3, \dots$) and

$$\alpha = 2, 4, 6, 12, 16, 20, 30, 36, 42, \dots \quad (1.6)$$

(corresponding to products of successive pairs of $\alpha^{\text{pre}} = 1, 2, 2, 3, 4, 4, 5, 6, 6, \dots$). More generally, for any integer $m \geq 1$, the sequences $(n!)^m$ and $(mn)!$ have nice m -branched continued fractions; and yet more generally, for any integers $a, b \geq 1$, the sequences $(an)!^b$, $(2an - 1)!!^b$, $(3an - 1)!!!^b$, $(3an - 2)!!!!^b$, etc. have nice ab -branched continued fractions (see Section 13).

But this is only the beginning of the story, because we are here principally concerned, not with sequences and matrices of real numbers, but with sequences and matrices of *polynomials* (with integer or real coefficients) in one or more indeterminates \mathbf{x} : in applications they will typically be generating polynomials that enumerate some combinatorial objects with respect to one or more statistics. We equip the polynomial ring $\mathbb{R}[\mathbf{x}]$ with the coefficientwise partial order: that is, we say that P is nonnegative (and write $P \succeq 0$) in case P is a polynomial with nonnegative coefficients. We then say that a matrix with entries in $\mathbb{R}[\mathbf{x}]$ is *coefficientwise totally positive* if all its minors are polynomials with nonnegative coefficients; and we say that a sequence $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ with entries in $\mathbb{R}[\mathbf{x}]$ is *coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive* if its associated infinite Hankel matrix is coefficientwise totally positive. Similar definitions apply to the formal-power-series ring $\mathbb{R}[[\mathbf{x}]]$. Most generally, we can consider sequences and matrices with entries in an arbitrary partially ordered commutative ring; total positivity and Hankel-total positivity are then defined in the obvious way.

Now, in a general partially ordered commutative ring — and even in the univariate polynomial ring $\mathbb{R}[x]$ with the coefficientwise order — the analogue of Theorem 1.1 fails to hold. Indeed, there are many sequences $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ in $\mathbb{R}[x]$ that are (provably or conjecturally) coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, but for which there does not exist any continued fraction (1.1) with coefficients α in $\mathbb{R}[x]$ [139, 140]: in general the coefficients α are rational functions of x , not polynomials. Nevertheless, the implication (d) \implies (a) does hold in an arbitrary partially ordered commutative ring [139, 140]: the existence of a continued fraction (1.1) with nonnegative coefficients is a *sufficient* (though far from necessary) condition for Hankel-total positivity.

In this paper we will prove an analogous result for the m -branched continued fractions of Stieltjes and Thron type, for all $m \geq 1$. This will allow us to prove the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity of some sequences of polynomials that do not have a classical continued fraction (1.1) in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{R}[\mathbf{x}]$, but which do have an m -branched continued fraction (for suitably chosen m) in which the α are polynomials in \mathbf{x} with nonnegative coefficients. Among these will be some multivariate polynomials that refine the sequences $(n!)^m$ and $(mn)!$ (see Section 13). In particular, for any integers $r, s \geq 0$ we will find a branched continued fraction for ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$, which generalizes Gauss’ [66] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$; and for $s = 0$ we will prove the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity of the corresponding sequence of polynomials (see Sections 13 and 14). We will also generalize these results to basic hypergeometric series ${}_r\phi_s$ (see Section 15).

Let us conclude this introduction by mentioning some precursors of our work. There has been some study of branched continued fractions in the analysis litera-

ture⁶, but this work seems rather distant from our concerns here. More relevant are a few papers in which combinatorialists have studied classes of lattice paths leading to branched continued fractions. Already a quarter-century ago, Viennot [157, section V.6] briefly considered the branched continued fractions (*fractions multicontinuées*) generated by Łukasiewicz paths; these correspond to our m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with $m = \infty$. This work was then carried forward in the Ph.D. theses of Roblet [126] and Varvak [156]. Gouyou-Beauchamps [74] used the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with $m = 2, 3, 4$ to enumerate certain classes of convex polyominoes, while Arquès and Françon [9] employed a different type of branched continued fraction to enumerate well-labeled trees. Finally — and closest to our own work — Albenque and Bouttier [6] introduced the branched continued fractions generated by m -Dyck paths, which correspond to our m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, and proved many interesting results about them (but did not consider total positivity). We will comment further on these papers in the subsequent sections.

The plan of this paper is as follows: In Section 2 we define the m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials and derive the fundamental recurrences that they satisfy. In Section 3 we analyze the relation between the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials for different values of m , and similarly for the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials. In Section 4 we define the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. In Section 5 we introduce the triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. In Section 6 we interpret the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials as generating polynomials for ordered forests of ordered trees. In Section 7 we show how the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials (and also some special cases of the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials) can be rewritten as m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with suitably “contracted” weights. In Section 8 we review the theory of production matrices, and then exhibit the production matrices for the triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. In Section 9 — which is the theoretical heart of the paper — we prove the coefficientwise total positivity of the Hankel matrices associated to the m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, and of the lower-triangular matrices of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials.

The remainder of the paper is devoted to illustrating the theory and applying it to cases of combinatorial interest. In Section 10 we compute explicit formulae for the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials when the weights α are periodic of period $m + 1$ or m ; these give rise to multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials and Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions. In Section 11 we generalize this to treat some cases in which the weights α are eventually periodic (i.e. a finite sequence followed by a periodic sequence); these include the multivariate Aval polynomials. In Section 12 we take one step up in complexity, and treat some cases in which the weights α are “quasi-affine” of period $m + 1$ or m , i.e. α_i is affine in i within each residue class of $i \bmod m + 1$ or m ; these give rise to multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions, which include the classical (univariate) m th-order Eulerian polynomials as

⁶See e.g. [100, pp. 274–280] and the work cited on [100, p. 285] and [34, p. 28].

specializations.⁷ In Section 13 we take another step up, and prove an m -branched continued fraction for ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_{m+1}F_0$; here the weights α are not quasi-affine, but they are products of m successive “pre-alphas” that are quasi-affine. We show that this m -branched continued fraction implies the coefficient-wise Hankel-total positivity of a sequence of multivariate polynomials that refines the sequences $(n!)^m$, $(mn)!$, $(2n-1)!!^m$ and many others. In Section 14 we extend this to find a branched continued fraction for ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ for arbitrary r, s , which generalizes Gauss’ [66] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$; and we discuss the implications for Hankel-total positivity. In Section 15 we extend the branched continued fractions to the basic hypergeometric series ${}_r\phi_s$. In Section 16 we make some final remarks, including a conjecture on higher-order Genocchi numbers.

We hope that this paper will be read (or at least readable) by mathematicians working in a variety of subfields: combinatorics and linear algebra, to be sure, but also analysis and special functions. We have therefore tried hard to make the paper self-contained and to make our arguments understandable to non-specialists. We apologize in advance to experts for boring them from time to time with overly detailed explanations of elementary facts.

We suggest [147, 149] as general references on enumerative combinatorics; [69] for Lagrange inversion; [105, Chapter 1] and [149, Chapter 7] for symmetric functions; [50, 62, 85, 119] for total positivity; [7, 123, 138] for hypergeometric series; and [65] for basic hypergeometric series.

2 The m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials

We begin by reviewing briefly some well-known facts concerning Dyck paths, Catalan numbers, Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials and Stieltjes-type continued fractions; then we review some slightly less well-known facts concerning Schröder paths, large Schröder numbers, Thron–Rogers polynomials and Thron-type continued fractions; and finally, we present our generalizations, which are parametrized by an integer $m \geq 1$ and which reduce to the classical Stieltjes–Rogers and Thron–Rogers polynomials when $m = 1$.

2.1 Dyck paths

A *Dyck path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting and ending on the horizontal axis, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise” or “up step”] and $(1, -1)$ [“fall” or “down step”]. More generally, a *Dyck path at level k* is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}_{\geq k}$, starting and ending at height k , using steps $(1, 1)$ and $(1, -1)$. Clearly a Dyck path must be of

⁷The Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions were known [148] (under the name of parking-function symmetric functions), though we here give them a simple (and possibly new) combinatorial interpretation in terms of ordered trees. The Eulerian symmetric functions, by contrast, appear not to have been introduced previously.

even length; we denote by \mathcal{D}_{2n} the set of Dyck paths from $(0,0)$ to $(2n,0)$. The ordinary generating function $D(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |\mathcal{D}_{2n}| t^n$ satisfies the functional equation

$$D(t) = 1 + tD(t)^2, \quad (2.1)$$

as can be seen by splitting the Dyck path (if it is of nonzero length) at its next-to-last return to the horizontal axis (i.e. its last visit to the horizontal axis excepting the final point); then the path is of the form $\mathcal{P}_0 U \mathcal{P}_1 D$ where \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary Dyck path at level i , U is an up step and D is a down step. The functional equation (2.1) can equivalently be written in the form

$$D(t) = \frac{1}{1 - tD(t)}, \quad (2.2)$$

which also has a nice combinatorial interpretation: a Dyck path can be uniquely decomposed as the concatenation of zero or more *irreducible* Dyck paths (that is, Dyck paths of nonzero length that touch the horizontal axis only at the starting and ending points); and an irreducible Dyck path is of the form $U \mathcal{P}_1 D$ where \mathcal{P}_1 is a Dyck path at level 1. It follows easily from (2.1)/(2.2) that

$$D(t) = \frac{1 - \sqrt{1 - 4t}}{2t} \quad (2.3)$$

and hence (by binomial expansion) that $|\mathcal{D}_{2n}|$ equals the *Catalan number* [128, 150]

$$C_n = \frac{1}{n+1} \binom{2n}{n} \quad (2.4)$$

[110, A000108]. All this is extremely well-known and is presented in numerous textbooks on enumerative combinatorics.

Now let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ be an infinite set of indeterminates, and let $S_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ be the generating polynomial for Dyck paths of length $2n$ in which each rise gets weight 1 and each fall from height i gets weight α_i . Clearly $S_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n with nonnegative integer coefficients; following Flajolet [51], we call it the ***Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial*** of order n . The first few are

$$S_0 = 1 \quad (2.5a)$$

$$S_1 = \alpha_1 \quad (2.5b)$$

$$S_2 = \alpha_1^2 + \alpha_1 \alpha_2 \quad (2.5c)$$

$$S_3 = \alpha_1^3 + 2\alpha_1^2 \alpha_2 + \alpha_1 \alpha_2^2 + \alpha_1 \alpha_2 \alpha_3 \quad (2.5d)$$

$$S_4 = \alpha_1^4 + 3\alpha_1^3 \alpha_2 + 3\alpha_1^2 \alpha_2^2 + \alpha_1 \alpha_2^3 + 2\alpha_1^2 \alpha_2 \alpha_3 + 2\alpha_1 \alpha_2^2 \alpha_3 + \alpha_1 \alpha_2 \alpha_3 \alpha_4 \quad (2.5e)$$

Let $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) t^n$ be the ordinary generating function for Dyck paths with these weights (considered as a formal power series in t); and more generally, let $f_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for Dyck paths at level k with these same weights. (Obviously f_k is just f_0 with each α_i replaced by α_{i+k} ; but we shall

not explicitly use this fact.) The same combinatorial arguments used earlier give the functional equations

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \alpha_{k+1}t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \quad (2.6)$$

and

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \alpha_{k+1}t f_{k+1}(t)}, \quad (2.7)$$

which generalize (2.1)/(2.2) and reduce to them when $\alpha = \mathbf{1}$. Iterating (2.7), we see immediately that f_k is given by the continued fraction

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+1}t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+2}t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+3}t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.8)$$

and in particular that f_0 is given by

$$f_0(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \frac{\alpha_3 t}{1 - \dots}}}}. \quad (2.9)$$

The right-hand sides of (2.8)/(2.9) are called *Stieltjes-type continued fractions*, or *S-fractions* for short. This combinatorial interpretation of S-fractions in terms of weighted Dyck paths is due to Flajolet [51].

Let us also consider the combinatorial meaning of a product of generating functions $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ ($\ell \geq 0$). We use the term *partial Dyck path* to denote a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, using steps $(1, 1)$ and $(1, -1)$, that starts on the horizontal axis but is allowed to end anywhere in the upper half-plane.⁸ We then claim that the coefficient of t^n in $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ is the generating polynomial for partial Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(2n + \ell, \ell)$ [with the usual weights 1 for a rise and α_i for a fall], which we will denote by $S_{n|\ell}(\alpha)$. To see this, we split the partial Dyck path at its last return to level 0; then it takes an up step; we split the remaining path at its last return to level 1, and so forth. So the path is of the form $\mathcal{P}_0 U \mathcal{P}_1 U \cdots \mathcal{P}_\ell$ where each \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary Dyck path at level i .⁹

And finally, let us mention an important method for proving continued fractions of the form (2.8)/(2.9), which was employed implicitly by Euler [48, section 21] for proving (1.2) and explicitly by Gauss [66, sections 12–14] for proving his continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$ (see also [142] for further discussion). Namely, let

⁸Here we follow the terminology of Stanley [150, p. 146]. Some authors [14] [53, p. 77] call this a *meander*.

⁹See also [157, pp. II-7–II-8] [73, pp. 295–296] for a similar argument applied to Motzkin paths.

$(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ be a sequence of formal power series (with coefficients in some commutative ring R) with constant term 1, and suppose that this sequence satisfies a linear three-term recurrence of the form

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \alpha_{k+1}t g_{k+1}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (2.10)$$

for some coefficients $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ in R . If we define $f_k(t) = g_k(t)/g_{k-1}(t)$ for $k \geq 0$, then (2.10) can be rewritten as

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \alpha_{k+1}t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t), \quad (2.11)$$

which is precisely the recurrence (2.6). It follows that $f_k(t)$ is the ordinary generating function for Dyck paths at level k with weights α and is therefore given by the S-fraction (2.8); in particular, $f_0(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n(\alpha) t^n$ where $S_n(\alpha)$ is the Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial evaluated at the specified values α ; and more generally $f_0(t) \cdots f_k(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_k(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_{n|k}(\alpha) t^n$ as defined in the preceding paragraph. This supplies a combinatorial interpretation of g_k , at least when $g_{-1} = 1$ (which occurs in some but not all applications). And conversely, if $(f_k)_{k \geq 0}$ satisfy (2.6)/(2.7), then for any $g_{-1}(t)$ with constant term 1, the series $g_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_{-1} f_0 f_1 \cdots f_k$ satisfy (2.10).

2.2 Schröder paths

A *Schröder path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting and ending on the horizontal axis, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise” or “up step”], $(1, -1)$ [“fall” or “down step”], and $(2, 0)$ [“long level step”]. More generally, a *Schröder path at level k* is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}_{\geq k}$, starting and ending at height k , using steps $(1, 1)$, $(1, -1)$ and $(2, 0)$. We define the *length* of a Schröder path to be the number of rises plus the number of falls plus twice the number of long level steps. Clearly a Schröder path must be of even length; we denote by \mathcal{S}_{2n} the set of Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(2n, 0)$. The ordinary generating function $S(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |\mathcal{S}_{2n}| t^n$ satisfies the functional equation

$$S(t) = 1 + tS(t) + tS(t)^2, \quad (2.12)$$

as can be seen by splitting the Schröder path (if it is of nonzero length) at its next-to-last return to the horizontal axis: then the path is either of the form $\mathcal{P}_0 L$ where \mathcal{P}_0 is an arbitrary Schröder path at level 0 and L is a long level step, or else it is of the form $\mathcal{P}_0 U \mathcal{P}_1 D$ where \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary Schröder path at level i , U is an up step and D is a down step. The functional equation (2.12) can equivalently be written in the form

$$S(t) = \frac{1}{1 - t - tS(t)}, \quad (2.13)$$

which can be interpreted as saying that a Schröder path can be uniquely decomposed as the concatenation of zero or more irreducible Schröder paths; and an irreducible Schröder path is either a long level step or else is of the form $U \mathcal{P}_1 D$ where \mathcal{P}_1 is a Schröder path at level 1. It follows easily from (2.12)/(2.13) that

$$S(t) = \frac{1 - t - \sqrt{1 - 6t + t^2}}{2t}. \quad (2.14)$$

The coefficient $[t^n]S(t) = |\mathcal{S}_{2n}|$ is called the *large Schröder number* r_n [110, A006318]; it has the explicit expression (among others)

$$r_n = \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{2n-k}{k} C_{n-k}, \quad (2.15)$$

since a Schröder path of length $2n$ with k long level steps can be obtained from a Dyck path of length $2n - 2k$ by inserting the long level steps arbitrarily among the Dyck steps.

Now let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta} = (\delta_i)_{i \geq 1}$ be infinite sets of indeterminates, and let $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ be the generating polynomial for Schröder paths of length $2n$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each fall from height i gets weight α_i , and each long level step at height i gets weight δ_{i+1} . Clearly $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n with nonnegative integer coefficients; we call it the ***Thron–Rogers polynomial*** of order n . The first few are

$$T_0 = 1 \quad (2.16a)$$

$$T_1 = \alpha_1 + \delta_1 \quad (2.16b)$$

$$T_2 = (\alpha_1 + \delta_1)^2 + \alpha_1(\alpha_2 + \delta_2) \quad (2.16c)$$

$$T_3 = (\alpha_1 + \delta_1)^3 + 2\alpha_1(\alpha_1 + \delta_1)(\alpha_2 + \delta_2) + \alpha_1(\alpha_2 + \delta_2)^2 + \alpha_1\alpha_2(\alpha_3 + \delta_3) \quad (2.16d)$$

When $\boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{0}$, the Thron–Rogers polynomials reduce to the Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials.

Let $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) t^n$ be the ordinary generating function for Schröder paths with these weights; and more generally, let $f_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for Schröder paths at level k with these same weights. (Obviously f_k is just f_0 with each α_i replaced by α_{i+k} and each δ_i replaced by δ_{i+k} ; but we shall not explicitly use this fact.) The same combinatorial arguments used earlier give the functional equations

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \delta_{k+1}t f_k(t) + \alpha_{k+1}t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \quad (2.17)$$

and

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta_{k+1}t - \alpha_{k+1}t f_{k+1}(t)}, \quad (2.18)$$

which generalize (2.12)/(2.13) and reduce to them when $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{1}$; they also generalize (2.6)/(2.7) and reduce to them when $\boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{0}$. Iterating (2.18), we see immediately that f_k is given by the continued fraction

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta_{k+1}t - \frac{\alpha_{k+1}t}{1 - \delta_{k+2}t - \frac{\alpha_{k+2}t}{1 - \delta_{k+3}t - \frac{\alpha_{k+3}t}{1 - \dots}}}} \quad (2.19)$$

and in particular that f_0 is given by

$$f_0(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta_1 t - \frac{\alpha_1 t}{1 - \delta_2 t - \frac{\alpha_2 t}{1 - \delta_3 t - \frac{\alpha_3 t}{1 - \dots}}}}. \quad (2.20)$$

The right-hand sides of (2.19)/(2.20) are called *Thron-type continued fractions*, or *T-fractions* for short. This combinatorial interpretation of T-fractions in terms of weighted Schröder paths was independently discovered by several authors over the past few years [61, 84, 111, 140]. (Two decades earlier, Roblet and Viennot [127] gave an alternate interpretation of T-fractions in terms of weighted Dyck paths: see Remark 2 at the end of this section.)

As for Dyck paths, we can consider the combinatorial meaning of a product $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$. We use the term *partial Schröder path* to denote a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, using steps $(1, 1)$, $(1, -1)$ and $(2, 0)$, that starts on the horizontal axis but is allowed to end anywhere in the upper half-plane. We then claim that the coefficient of t^n in $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ is the generating polynomial for partial Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(2n + \ell, \ell)$ [with the usual weights], which we denote by $T_{n|\ell}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$. The argument is the same as for Dyck paths, with one small addition: we observe that the step after the subwalk \mathcal{P}_i cannot be a down step or a long level step, because that would either take us below the horizontal axis or else violate the fact that we have already seen the last returns to levels $\leq i$.

And finally, the Euler–Gauss method for proving S-fractions, discussed in (2.10)–(2.11) above, has a straightforward generalization to T-fractions. Namely, let $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ be as before, and suppose that this sequence satisfies a linear three-term recurrence of the form

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \delta_{k+1} t g_k(t) + \alpha_{k+1} t g_{k+1}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (2.21)$$

for some coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta} = (\delta_i)_{i \geq 1}$ in R . Defining $f_k(t) = g_k(t)/g_{k-1}(t)$ as before, (2.21) can be rewritten as (2.17). So $f_k(t)$ is the ordinary generating function for Schröder paths at level k with weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}$ and is therefore given by the T-fraction (2.19); in particular, $f_0(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) t^n$ where $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is the Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial evaluated at the specified values $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}$; and more generally $f_0(t) \cdots f_k(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_k(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_{n|k}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) t^n$. This method was used by Euler to derive a T-fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$ [7, p. 98] [10, 20, 124].

2.3 m -Dyck paths

We recall the following definition [12, 27, 122]:

Definition 2.1. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$. An *m -Dyck path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting and ending on the horizontal axis, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise”

or “up step”] and $(1, -m)$ [“ m -fall” or “down step”]: see Figure 1 for an example. More generally, an m -Dyck path at level k is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}_{\geq k}$, starting and ending at height k , using steps $(1, 1)$ and $(1, -m)$.

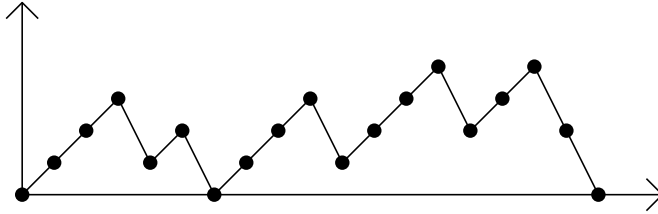


Figure 1. A 2-Dyck path of length 18.

Since the number of up steps must equal m times the number of down steps, the length of an m -Dyck path must be a multiple of $m + 1$; we denote by $\mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}$ the set of m -Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m + 1)n, 0)$. The ordinary generating function $D_m(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |\mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}| t^n$ satisfies the functional equation

$$D_m(t) = 1 + tD_m(t)^{m+1}, \quad (2.22)$$

as can be seen by splitting the m -Dyck path (if it is of nonzero length) at its next-to-last return to the horizontal axis; then we further split the remaining part of the path at its last return to height 1, then its last return to height 2, \dots , and finally its last return to height m ; so the complete path is of the form $\mathcal{P}_0 U \mathcal{P}_1 U \mathcal{P}_2 U \cdots \mathcal{P}_m D$ where \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary m -Dyck path at level i (see Figure 2 for an example of this decomposition).

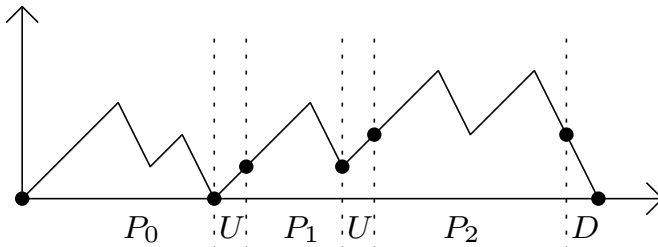


Figure 2. The decomposition of a 2-Dyck path. Only the important vertices for this decomposition are shown explicitly.

The functional equation (2.22) can equivalently be written in the form

$$D_m(t) = \frac{1}{1 - tD_m(t)^m}, \quad (2.23)$$

which also has a nice combinatorial interpretation: an m -Dyck path can be uniquely decomposed as the concatenation of zero or more irreducible m -Dyck paths; and an irreducible m -Dyck path is of the form $U \mathcal{P}_1 U \mathcal{P}_2 \cdots U \mathcal{P}_m D$ where $\mathcal{P}_1, \dots, \mathcal{P}_m$ are as

above. By applying Lagrange inversion to (2.22), one finds that $|\mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}|$ equals the *Fuss–Catalan number of order $p = m + 1$* :

$$C_n^{(p)} = \frac{1}{(p-1)n+1} \binom{pn}{n} = \frac{1}{pn+1} \binom{pn+1}{n} \quad (2.24)$$

[110, A000108, A001764, A002293, A002294, A002295, A002296 for $m = 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6$].

We now come to the central object of this paper:

Definition 2.2. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be an infinite set of indeterminates. The *m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial* of order n , denoted $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$, is the generating polynomial for m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)n$ in which each rise gets weight 1 and each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i .

Clearly $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n with nonnegative integer coefficients. For instance, for $m = 2$ the first few are

$$S_0^{(2)} = 1 \quad (2.25a)$$

$$S_1^{(2)} = \alpha_2 \quad (2.25b)$$

$$S_2^{(2)} = \alpha_2^2 + \alpha_2\alpha_3 + \alpha_2\alpha_4 \quad (2.25c)$$

$$S_3^{(2)} = \alpha_2^3 + 2\alpha_2^2\alpha_3 + \alpha_2\alpha_3^2 + 2\alpha_2^2\alpha_4 + 2\alpha_2\alpha_3\alpha_4 + \alpha_2\alpha_4^2 \\ + \alpha_2\alpha_3\alpha_5 + \alpha_2\alpha_4\alpha_5 + \alpha_2\alpha_4\alpha_6 \quad (2.25d)$$

Let $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) t^n$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Dyck paths with these weights; and more generally, let $f_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Dyck paths at level k with these same weights. (Obviously f_k is just f_0 with each α_i replaced by α_{i+k} ; but we shall not explicitly use this fact.) The same combinatorial arguments used earlier give the functional equations

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \alpha_{k+m} t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m}(t) \quad (2.26)$$

and

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \alpha_{k+m} t f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m}(t)}, \quad (2.27)$$

which generalize (2.22)/(2.23) and reduce to them when $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \mathbf{1}$; they also generalize (2.6)/(2.7) and reduce to them when $m = 1$. Iterating (2.27), we see immediately that f_k is given by the branched continued fraction

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \alpha_{k+m} t \prod_{i_1=1}^m \frac{1}{1 - \alpha_{k+m+i_1} t \prod_{i_2=1}^m \frac{1}{1 - \alpha_{k+m+i_1+i_2} t \prod_{i_3=1}^m \frac{1}{1 - \cdots}}}} \quad (2.28a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+m} t}{\left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+m+1} t}{\left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+m+2} t}{(\cdots) \cdots (\cdots)}\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+2m+1} t}{(\cdots) \cdots (\cdots)}\right)\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+2m} t}{\left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+2m+1} t}{(\cdots) \cdots (\cdots)}\right) \cdots \left(1 - \frac{\alpha_{k+3m} t}{(\cdots) \cdots (\cdots)}\right)\right)}} \quad (2.28b)$$

and in particular that f_0 is given by the specialization of (2.28) to $k = 0$. We shall call the right-hand side of (2.28) an *m -branched Stieltjes-type continued fraction*, or *m -S-fraction* for short.

As for Dyck and Schröder paths, we can consider a product $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$. We use the term *partial m -Dyck path* to denote a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, using steps $(1, 1)$ and $(1, -m)$, that starts on the horizontal axis but is allowed to end anywhere in the upper half-plane. We claim that the coefficient of t^n in $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ is the generating polynomial for partial m -Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n + \ell, \ell)$ [with the usual weights], which we denote by $S_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\alpha)$. The argument is the same as for Dyck and Schröder paths.

All the (partial) m -Dyck paths to be considered in this paper will live in the directed graph $G_m = (V_m, E_m)$ with vertex set

$$V_m = \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N} : x = y \bmod m + 1\} \quad (2.29)$$

and edge set

$$E_m = \{((x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2)) \in V_m \times V_m : x_2 - x_1 = 1 \text{ and } y_2 - y_1 \in \{1, -m\}\}. \quad (2.30)$$

This is depicted in Figure 3 for $m = 2$.

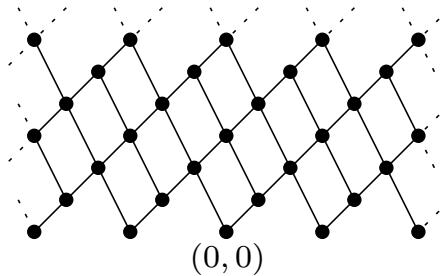


Figure 3. The directed graph G_m for $m = 2$. All edges point towards the right.

The key fact about this graph is that it is *planar*: this will allow us to apply the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma to prove the total positivity of various matrices associated to the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials.

And finally, the Euler–Gauss method for proving S-fractions, discussed in (2.10)–(2.11) above, has a straightforward generalization to m -S-fractions:

Proposition 2.3 (Euler–Gauss recurrence method for m -S-fractions). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ be a sequence of formal power series (with coefficients in some commutative ring R) with constant term 1. Suppose that this sequence satisfies a linear three-term recurrence*

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \alpha_{k+m} t g_{k+m}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (2.31)$$

for some coefficients $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ in R . Defining $f_k(t) = g_k(t)/g_{k-1}(t)$, we have:

- (a) $f_k(t)$ is the ordinary generating function for m -Dyck paths at level k with weights α and hence is given by the m -S-fraction (2.28).

(b) In particular, $f_0(t) = g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n^{(m)}(\alpha) t^n$ where $S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ is the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial evaluated at the specified values α .

(c) More generally, $f_0(t) \cdots f_k(t) = g_k(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_{n|k}^{(m)}(\alpha) t^n$.

Please note that in the recurrence (2.31) we have $k + m$ on the right-hand side, in place of the $k + 1$ that occurred in (2.10).

PROOF. Using the definition $f_k = g_k/g_{k-1}$, the recurrence (2.31) can be rewritten as (2.26). \square

We will use this method in Section 12 to handle some cases with quasi-affine coefficients α , and again in Sections 13–15 to handle ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ and ${}_r\phi_s$. The main difficulty in using this method is that one needs to guess not only the α but also the $(g_k(t))$.

2.4 m -Schröder paths

In the same way as Dyck paths can be generalized to Schröder paths, so m -Dyck paths can be generalized to m -Schröder paths:

Definition 2.4. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$. An **m -Schröder path** is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting and ending on the horizontal axis, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise” or “up step”], $(1, -m)$ [“ m -fall” or “down step”] and $(2, -(m - 1))$ [“ m -long step”]: see Figure 4 for an example. We define the **length** of an m -Schröder path to be the number of rises plus the number of m -falls plus twice the number of m -long steps. More generally, an **m -Schröder path at level k** is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}_{\geq k}$, starting and ending at height k , using steps $(1, 1)$, $(1, -m)$ and $(2, -(m - 1))$.

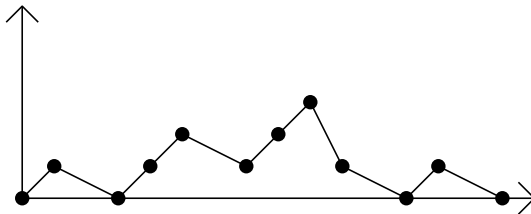


Figure 4. A 2-Schröder path of length 15.

It is not difficult to see that the length of an m -Schröder path must be a multiple of $m + 1$; we denote by $\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}$ the set of m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m + 1)n, 0)$. The ordinary generating function $S_m(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}| t^n$ satisfies the functional equation

$$S_m(t) = 1 + tS_m(t)^m + tS_m(t)^{m+1}, \quad (2.32)$$

as can be seen by splitting the m -Schröder path (if it is of nonzero length) in the same way as was done for m -Dyck paths; but now, in addition to the path being $\mathcal{P}_0 U \mathcal{P}_1 U \mathcal{P}_2 U \cdots \mathcal{P}_m D$ where \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary Schröder path at level i , there is also

the possibility that the subwalk $UP_m D$ is replaced by an m -long step. The functional equation (2.32) can equivalently be written in the form

$$S_m(t) = \frac{1}{1 - tS_m(t)^{m-1} - tS_m(t)^m}, \quad (2.33)$$

which also has a nice combinatorial interpretation: an m -Schröder path can be uniquely decomposed as the concatenation of zero or more irreducible m -Schröder paths; and an irreducible m -Schröder path is either $UP_1 UP_2 \cdots UP_m D$ or $UP_1 UP_2 \cdots UP_{m-1} L$. By applying Lagrange inversion to (2.32), one finds that

$$|\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}| = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} \binom{mn}{n-1-k} \binom{n}{k} 2^{n-k} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1, \quad (2.34)$$

or by combinatorial arguments [144] one finds the alternative formula

$$|\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}| = \sum_{\ell=0}^n \frac{1}{mn - \ell + 1} \binom{(m+1)n - \ell}{n} \binom{n}{\ell} \quad (2.35)$$

(here ℓ corresponds to the number of m -long steps). For $m = 1, 2, 3, 4$ these sums are [110, A006318, A027307, A144097, A260332]; for $m = 1, 2$ the triangular array (2.35) is [110, A060693/A088617, A108426].

Definition 2.5. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\delta = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m}$ be infinite sets of indeterminates. The *m -Thron–Rogers polynomial* of order n , denoted $T_n^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta)$, is the generating polynomial for m -Schröder paths of length $(m+1)n$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i , and each m -long step from height i gets weight δ_{i+1} .

Clearly $T_n^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n with nonnegative integer coefficients. For instance, for $m = 2$ the first few are

$$T_0^{(2)} = 1 \quad (2.36a)$$

$$T_1^{(2)} = \alpha_2 + \delta_2 \quad (2.36b)$$

$$T_2^{(2)} = (\alpha_2 + \delta_2)^2 + \alpha_2(\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 + \delta_3 + \delta_4) + \delta_2(\alpha_3 + \delta_3) \quad (2.36c)$$

(and already $T_3^{(2)}$ is quite complicated, containing 41 monomials).

Let $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_n^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta) t^n$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Schröder paths with these weights; and more generally, let $f_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Schröder paths at level k with these same weights. (Obviously f_k is just f_0 with each α_i replaced by α_{i+k} and each δ_i replaced by δ_{i+k} ; but we shall not explicitly use this fact.) The same combinatorial arguments used earlier give the functional equations

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \delta_{k+m} t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m-1}(t) + \alpha_{k+m} t f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m}(t) \quad (2.37)$$

and

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \delta_{k+m}t f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m-1}(t) - \alpha_{k+m}t f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+m}(t)}, \quad (2.38)$$

which generalize all the preceding functional equations: they reduce to (2.32)/(2.33) when $\alpha = \delta = \mathbf{1}$, to (2.26)/(2.27) when $\delta = \mathbf{0}$, and to (2.17)/(2.18) when $m = 1$. Iterating (2.38), we see immediately that f_k is given by the branched continued fraction

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\delta_{k+m}t}{\left(1 - \frac{\delta_{k+m+1}t}{(\dots) \cdots} - \frac{\alpha_{k+m+1}t}{(\dots) \cdots}\right) \cdots} - \frac{\alpha_{k+m}t}{\left(1 - \frac{\delta_{k+m+1}t}{(\dots) \cdots} - \frac{\alpha_{k+m+1}t}{(\dots) \cdots}\right) \cdots}} \quad (2.39)$$

and in particular that f_0 is given by the specialization of (2.39) to $k = 0$. We shall call the right-hand side of (2.39) an *m -branched Thron-type continued fraction*, or *m -T-fraction* for short.

Let us also consider a product $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$. We use the term *partial m -Schröder path* to denote a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, using steps $(1, 1)$, $(1, -m)$ and $(2, -(m-1))$, that starts on the horizontal axis but is allowed to end anywhere in the upper half-plane. We claim that the coefficient of t^n in $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ is the generating polynomial for partial m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n + \ell, \ell)$ [with the usual weights], which we denote by $T_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta)$. The argument is the same as for Dyck and Schröder paths.

All the (partial) m -Schröder paths to be considered in this paper will live in the directed graph $\tilde{G}_m = (V_m, \tilde{E}_m)$ with vertex set (2.29) and edge set

$$\tilde{E}_m = E_m \cup \left\{ ((x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2)) \in V_m \times V_m : x_2 - x_1 = 2 \text{ and } y_2 - y_1 = -(m-1) \right\} \quad (2.40)$$

where E_m was defined in (2.30). This is depicted in Figure 5 for $m = 2$.

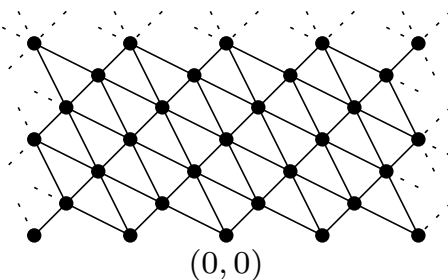


Figure 5. The directed graph \tilde{G}_m for $m = 2$. All edges point towards the right.

The graph \tilde{G}_m , which augments the graph G_m defined in (2.29)/(2.30) by including additional edges associated to the m -long steps, is again planar and acyclic: this will allow us, once again, to apply the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma to prove the total positivity of various matrices associated to the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials.

And finally, the Euler–Gauss method generalized to m -S-fractions as in Proposition 2.3 above, has a straightforward generalization to m -T-fractions. Let $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ be as before, satisfying a recurrence

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \delta_{k+m} t g_{k+m-1}(t) + \alpha_{k+m} t g_{k+m}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (2.41)$$

for some coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta} = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m}$. Defining $f_k(t) = g_k(t)/g_{k-1}(t)$, (2.41) can be rewritten as (2.37). So $f_k(t)$ is the ordinary generating function for m -Schröder paths at level k with weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}$, and is given by the m -T-fraction (2.39); and $f_0(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) t^n$; and more generally $f_0(t) \cdots f_k(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} g_k(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_{n|k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) t^n$.

Remark. When $m = 1$, a T-fraction with $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \mathbf{0}$ is trivial: $f_0(t) = 1/(1 - \delta_1 t)$. Combinatorially this is because a Schröder path without falls cannot have rises: it can only be a sequence of zero or more long level steps. But when $m > 1$, the situation is different: we have in fact $T_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) = S_n^{(m-1)}(\boldsymbol{\delta})$. This is immediate from the functional equation (2.37) for m -T-fractions: when $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \mathbf{0}$ it reduces to the functional equation (2.26) for $(m-1)$ -S-fractions with $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ replaced by $\boldsymbol{\delta}$. It can also be seen combinatorially: m -Schröder paths of length $(m+1)n$ without m -falls are in bijection with $(m-1)$ -Dyck paths of length mn , by replacing each m -long step by an $(m-1)$ -fall. So the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials $T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ contain both $T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \mathbf{0}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ and $T_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\delta}) = S_n^{(m-1)}(\boldsymbol{\delta})$ as specializations. ■

2.5 Some further remarks

1. Many authors, in presenting Dyck and Schröder paths, rotate our picture by $+45^\circ$: then the roles of up, down and long level steps are played, respectively, by $(0, 1)$ [“north”], $(1, 0)$ [“east”] and $(1, 1)$ [“diagonal” or “northeast”], and the path runs from $(0, 0)$ to (n, n) while staying in the region $y \geq x$. Alternatively, the roles of north and east can be reversed: then the path stays in the region $y \leq x$. Following Duchon [38], we can call this the “northeastbound” representation of Dyck and Schröder paths.

Likewise, in presenting m -Dyck and m -Schröder paths, some authors [17, 144] use an analogously turned picture (although for $m \neq 1$ the required linear transformation is no longer angle-preserving): the roles of up, down and long steps are again played by $(0, 1)$, $(1, 0)$ and $(1, 1)$, and now the path runs from $(0, 0)$ to (n, mn) while staying in the region $y \geq mx$. Alternatively, the roles of north and east can be reversed: then the path runs from $(0, 0)$ to (mn, n) while staying in the region $y \leq x/m$. We again call this the “northeastbound” representation.

However, we prefer the “horizontal” (or “eastbound”) presentation employed here, which makes clear that the paths are *directed* along the horizontal (“time”) axis. See [38] for a comparison of the northeastbound and eastbound representations; and see [14] for a general discussion of enumeration of directed lattice paths.

2. Roblet and Viennot [127] gave an alternate interpretation of the Thron–Rogers polynomials $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ in terms of Dyck paths. A *peak* of a Dyck path is a vertex that is arrived at by a rise and departed from by a fall; thus, a *fall from a peak* is

a fall preceded by a rise, while a *fall from a non-peak* is a fall preceded by a fall. (Note that the *first* step of a Dyck path *cannot* be a fall!) Roblet and Viennot proved [127, Proposition 1] that $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is the generating polynomial for Dyck paths of length $2n$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each fall from a non-peak starting at height i gets weight α_i , and each fall from a peak starting at height i gets weight $\alpha_i + \delta_i$. This is in fact an easy consequence of the Schröder-path interpretation that we have already discussed: it suffices to apply the surjection of Schröder paths onto Dyck paths defined by replacing each long level step by a pair UD (thus creating a new peak). When $\boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{0}$, falls from peaks and non-peaks get the same weight, and we recover $T_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \mathbf{0}) = S_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$.

A similar mapping shows that the m -Thron–Rogers polynomial $T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is the generating polynomial for m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)n$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each m -fall from a non-peak starting at height i gets weight α_i , and each m -fall from a peak starting at height i gets weight $\alpha_i + \delta_i$.

3. For weighted m -Dyck paths with $m = 2$, equations (2.26)–(2.28) were presented briefly by Varvak [156, pp. 3–4]; but she did not dwell on them, because her main goal was to motivate a more general class of paths — namely, Łukasiewicz paths, in which m -falls of *all* $m \geq 0$ are simultaneously allowed — and the corresponding branched continued fractions. We will discuss this construction in Section 4. In Section 9 we will show that the m -Dyck paths possess a desirable property not possessed by the more general Łukasiewicz paths, namely, Hankel-total positivity.

4. Stieltjes-type continued fractions (2.9) are an extraordinarily useful tool in combinatorics: one reason for this is that “generically” (i.e. barring certain degenerate cases) there is a one-to-one correspondence between formal power series $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n$ with $a_0 = 1$ and S-fractions (2.9). Thron-type continued fractions (2.20), by contrast, are more difficult to work with, because there is a high degree of nonuniqueness: the number of free parameters at each level is twice as many as needed. The m -S-fractions and m -T-fractions suffer from an even greater nonuniqueness: indeed, already from the definition in terms of m -Dyck paths one can see that the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ depends on the coefficients α_i for $m \leq i \leq mn$ [cf. (2.25) for $m = 2$ and $n \leq 3$], so that the number of free parameters at each level is roughly m times as many as needed; and the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials are twice as bad as this. So it is highly nontrivial to know whether a given sequence $\boldsymbol{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ has a nice m -S-fraction for some given $m \geq 2$; this has to be done largely by trial and error.

In addition, the branched continued fractions (2.28) and (2.39) are irredeemably ugly, and seem almost impossible to work with (or even to write!). We shall therefore hardly ever write out a branched continued fraction; we shall instead work directly with the m -Dyck and m -Schröder paths and/or with the recurrences (2.26)/(2.27) and (2.37)/(2.38) that their generating functions satisfy.

5. In a very interesting paper, Albenque and Bouttier [6] introduced some polynomials that are essentially equivalent to our m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, along with the corresponding branched continued fraction. Their expressions are slightly different from ours, because they chose to weight the rises rather than the m -falls. (They also interchanged rises and falls compared to our notation, but that is a trivial

change, which is equivalent to reversing the path.) They noted, as we just did, that the m -S-fractions have roughly m times as many unknowns as equations; and they showed how to restore the uniqueness by specifying not only the generating polynomials of m -Dyck paths but also the generating polynomials of a suitable set of partial m -Dyck paths [6, Theorem 3 and Corollary 4]. Finally, they applied these branched continued fractions to the enumeration of certain classes of planar maps.

6. Our terminology for continued fractions follows the general practice in the combinatorial literature, starting with Flajolet [51]. The classical analytic literature on continued fractions [34, 83, 100, 116, 159] generally uses a different terminology. For instance, Jones and Thron [83, pp. 128–129, 386–389] use the term “regular C-fraction” for (a minor variant of) what we have called an S-fraction; they call it an “S-fraction” if all $\alpha_n < 0$. ■

3 Relation between different values of m

From the definitions given in the preceding section, it might seem that there is no relation between the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials for different values of $m \geq 1$: each value of m seems to provide a distinct generalization of the classical Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials. But appearances are deceptive: the actual situation is that the 1-Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials are contained in the 2-Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, which are in turn contained in the 3-Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, and so forth; thus, the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials become increasingly general as m grows. To see this, let us show explicitly how the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials are equal to a suitable specialization of the m' -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials for any $m' > m$.

Given $1 \leq m < m'$, let us say that a subset $I \subseteq [m', \infty)$ is **(m, m') -good** if

- (a) $m' \notin I$; and
- (b) For each $j \geq m'$, either $j \in I$ or exactly $m' - m$ of the elements $j + 1, \dots, j + m'$ belong to I .

We then have:

Proposition 3.1. *Fix $1 \leq m < m'$, and let I be an (m, m') -good subset of $[m', \infty)$. Let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be an infinite set of indeterminates, and define $\alpha' = (\alpha'_i)_{i \geq m'}$ by setting $\alpha'_i = 0$ for $i \in I$, and then setting $(\alpha'_i)_{i \in [m', \infty) \setminus I}$ to be $(\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ in increasing order. Then $S_n^{(m)}(\alpha) = S_n^{(m')}(\alpha')$.*

We will give two proofs of Proposition 3.1: a first proof based on manipulating the branched continued fraction (2.28), and a second proof based on the functional equation (2.27). For the special case in which the set I is periodic of period $m + 1$, we will also give (in Section 8.2) a third proof, based on consideration of the corresponding production matrices.

FIRST PROOF. Consider the m' -branched continued fraction (2.28b) with $k = 0$ (and m replaced by m' , and α by α'). Since I is an (m, m') -good subset of $[m', \infty)$,

condition (a) guarantees that $\alpha'_{m'} = \alpha_m$. Then condition (b) guarantees that exactly $m' - m$ of the subsequent branches are killed (because the index i corresponding to the root of that branch belongs to the set I); and then, for the m branches that are not killed, exactly $m' - m$ of their sub-branches will be killed; and so on at all levels. The result is an m -branched continued fraction (2.28b) with the weights α . \square

SECOND PROOF. For each $k \geq 0$, let $f'_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for m' -Dyck paths at level k with the weights α' . [The prime here is *not* intended as a derivative!] Then $(f'_k)_{k \geq 0}$ satisfies the functional equation (2.27) with m replaced by m' and α_{k+m} by $\alpha'_{k+m'}$. Since $\alpha'_i = 0$ for $i \in I$, it follows that $f'_k = 1$ for $k \in I - m'$. [Note that $0 \notin I - m'$ by hypothesis (a).] By hypothesis (b), for each $k \in \mathbb{N} \setminus (I - m')$, exactly $m' - m$ of the indices $i \in \{k + 1, \dots, k + m'\}$ belong to $I - m'$ and hence have $f'_i = 1$. So if we define $(f_k)_{k \geq 0} = (f'_k)_{k \in \mathbb{N} \setminus (I - m')}$ where both sequences are taken in increasing order, then the functional equation (2.27) for $(f'_k)_{k \geq 0}$ [with m replaced by m' and α_{k+m} by $\alpha'_{k+m'}$] is equivalent to the functional equation (2.27) for $(f_k)_{k \geq 0}$ [with m and α as is]. \square

Remarks. 1. The first proof of Proposition 3.1 is the *only* place in this paper where we will find it convenient to use the branched continued fraction (2.28).

2. The second proof can be reinterpreted combinatorially as a bijection from m -Dyck paths to the subclass of m' -Dyck paths that have no falls from heights in the set I . We leave the details to the reader.

3. For the case $(m, m') = (1, 2)$, it is easy to give a “constructive” explanation of what it means for a set I to be (m, m') -good: namely, $I \subseteq [2, \infty)$ is $(1, 2)$ -good if and only if the sequence $2, 3, \dots$ starts with an element of I^c (that is, $2 \in I^c$) and consists of blocks of either one or two elements of I^c alternating with single elements of I .

It follows that, given any classical S-fraction with $\alpha_i \neq 0$, there are *uncountably many* 2-S-fractions that are equivalent to it! This illustrates the extreme nonuniqueness of m -S-fractions with $m \geq 2$. (Later we will see also many examples of this nonuniqueness that do not merely involve inserting zeroes into an existing sequence.)

■

For the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials we have a more restrictive result, in which the set I must be taken to be periodic of period m' :

Proposition 3.2. *Fix $1 \leq m < m'$, and let $J \subseteq \{1, \dots, m' - 1\}$ be a set of cardinality $m' - m$. Then let $I = \{i \geq m' : \text{there exists } j \in J \text{ with } i \equiv j \pmod{m'}\}$. Let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\delta = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m}$ be infinite sets of indeterminates, and define $\alpha' = (\alpha'_i)_{i \geq m'}$ by setting $\alpha'_i = 0$ for $i \in I$, and then setting $(\alpha'_i)_{i \in [m', \infty) \setminus I}$ to be $(\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ in increasing order, and likewise for δ' . Then $T_n^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta) = T_n^{(m')}(\alpha', \delta')$.*

Note that I does not contain any multiple of m' .

PROOF. We imitate the second proof of Proposition 3.1. For each $k \geq 0$, let $f'_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for m' -Schröder paths at level k with the weights

α' and δ' . Then $(f'_k)_{k \geq 0}$ satisfies the functional equation (2.38) with m replaced by m' , α_{k+m} by $\alpha'_{k+m'}$, and δ_{k+m} by $\delta'_{k+m'}$. Since $\alpha'_i = \delta'_i = 0$ for $i \in I$, it follows that $f'_k = 1$ for $k \in I - m'$. [Note that $0 \notin I - m'$.] Then, for each $k \in \mathbb{N} \setminus (I - m')$, exactly $m' - m$ of the indices $i \in \{k + 1, \dots, k + m' - 1\}$ belong to $I - m'$, and moreover $k + m' \notin I - m'$. So, whenever $k \in \mathbb{N} \setminus (I - m')$, both of the terms $\delta'_{k+m'} t f'_{k+1} \cdots f'_{k+m'-1}$ and $\alpha'_{k+m'} t f'_{k+1} \cdots f'_{k+m'}$ will reduce as desired. So if we define $(f_k)_{k \geq 0} = (f'_k)_{k \in \mathbb{N} \setminus (I - m')}$ where both sequences are taken in increasing order, then the functional equation (2.38) for $(f'_k)_{k \geq 0}$ [with m replaced by m' , etc.] is equivalent to the functional equation (2.38) for $(f_k)_{k \geq 0}$. \square

4 The m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials

The following class of paths is well known:

Definition 4.1. A *Lukasiewicz path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting and ending on the horizontal axis, using steps $(1, r)$ with $r \leq 1$: the allowed steps are thus $r = 1$ (“rise”), $r = 0$ (“level step”), and $r = -\ell$ for any $\ell > 0$ (“ ℓ -fall”). See Figure 6 for an example. More generally, a *Lukasiewicz path at level k* is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}_{\geq k}$, starting and ending at height k , using these same steps. A Lukasiewicz path is called an *m -Lukasiewicz path* if it uses only the steps $(1, r)$ with $-m \leq r \leq 1$. A 1-Lukasiewicz path is called a *Motzkin path*. We also use the term “ ∞ -Lukasiewicz path” as a synonym of “Lukasiewicz path”. For $1 \leq m \leq \infty$, we denote by $\mathcal{L}_n^{(m)}$ the set of m -Lukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(n, 0)$.¹⁰

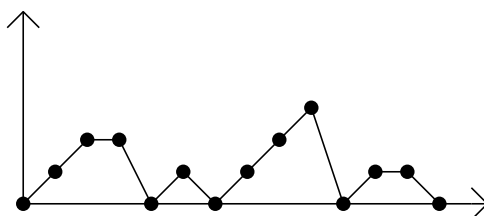


Figure 6. A Lukasiewicz path of length 13.

Definition 4.2. Fix $1 \leq m \leq \infty$, and let $\beta = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ be indeterminates. The *m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial* of order n , denoted $J_n^{(m)}(\beta)$, is the generating polynomial for m -Lukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(n, 0)$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each level step at height i gets weight $\beta_i^{(0)}$, and each ℓ -fall from height i gets weight $\beta_i^{(\ell)}$.

¹⁰**Warning:** Many authors define Lukasiewicz paths by interchanging rises and falls compared to our definition: thus, for them a “Lukasiewicz path” (resp. “ m -Lukasiewicz path”) uses steps $(1, r)$ with $r \geq -1$ (resp. $-1 \leq r \leq m$). We shall call this a *reversed Lukasiewicz* (resp. *reversed m -Lukasiewicz*) path. Obviously, $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ is a Lukasiewicz (resp. m -Lukasiewicz) path if and only if its reversal $\omega^{\text{rev}} = (\omega_n, \dots, \omega_0)$ is a reversed Lukasiewicz (resp. reversed m -Lukasiewicz) path.

For $m = 1$ the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials reduce to the standard Jacobi–Rogers polynomials as introduced by Flajolet [51]. When $m = 1$ we will also use the notation $\beta_i = \beta_i^{(1)}$ and $\gamma_i = \beta_i^{(0)}$, and write the Jacobi–Rogers polynomials as $J_n(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \boldsymbol{\gamma})$ where $\boldsymbol{\beta} = (\beta_i)_{i \geq 1}$ and $\boldsymbol{\gamma} = (\gamma_i)_{i \geq 0}$.

Let $f_0(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) t^n$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Łukasiewicz paths with these weights; and more generally, let $f_k(t)$ be the ordinary generating function for m -Łukasiewicz paths at level k with these same weights. (Obviously f_k is just f_0 with each $\beta_i^{(\ell)}$ replaced by $\beta_{i+k}^{(\ell)}$; but we shall not explicitly use this fact.) We can derive a recurrence for the f_k as follows: Split an m -Łukasiewicz path \mathcal{P} at level k (if it is of nonzero length) at its next-to-last return to level k : it is of the form $\mathcal{P} = \mathcal{P}_k \mathcal{P}'$ where \mathcal{P}_k is an arbitrary m -Łukasiewicz path at level k and \mathcal{P}' is an irreducible m -Łukasiewicz path at level k . Now \mathcal{P}' is either a single level step, or else it starts with a rise and ends with an ℓ -fall for some ℓ ($1 \leq \ell \leq m$). In the latter case, split \mathcal{P}' at its *last* return to level $k+1$, then its last return to level $k+2$, and so on, until its last return to level $k+\ell$; then it is of the form $\mathcal{P}' = U\mathcal{P}_{k+1}U\mathcal{P}_{k+2} \cdots U\mathcal{P}_{k+\ell}D$ where \mathcal{P}_i is an arbitrary m -Łukasiewicz path at level i and D is an ℓ -fall. It follows that [157, pp. V-38–V-39] [126, pp. 22, 143] [156, p. 5]

$$f_k(t) = 1 + \sum_{\ell=0}^m \beta_{k+\ell}^{(\ell)} t^{\ell+1} f_k(t) f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+\ell}(t) \quad (4.1)$$

and hence

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \sum_{\ell=0}^m \beta_{k+\ell}^{(\ell)} t^{\ell+1} f_{k+1}(t) \cdots f_{k+\ell}(t)}. \quad (4.2)$$

When $m = 1$ these reduce to the usual functional equations for weighted Motzkin paths [51]; and when $\beta_i^{(m)} = \alpha_i$ and $\beta_i^{(\ell)} = 0$ for $\ell \neq m$, they reduce to the functional equations (2.26)/(2.27) for weighted m -Dyck paths after a change of variables $t \rightarrow t^{m+1}$.

We can iterate (4.2) to obtain a branched continued fraction [157, pp. V-39–V-40] [126, pp. 22–24, 143] [156, p. 5]:

$$f_k(t) = \frac{1}{1 - \beta_k^{(0)} t - \sum_{\ell_1=1}^m \beta_{k+\ell_1}^{(\ell_1)} t^{\ell_1+1} \prod_{i_1=1}^{\ell_1} \frac{1}{1 - \beta_{k+i_1}^{(0)} t - \sum_{\ell_2=1}^m \beta_{k+i_1+\ell_2}^{(\ell_2)} t^{\ell_2+1} \prod_{i_2=1}^{\ell_2} \frac{1}{1 - \cdots}}}. \quad (4.3)$$

We shall call the right-hand side of (4.3) an **m -branched Jacobi-type continued fraction**, or **m -J-fraction** for short. Some authors [126, 157] call it a *Łukasiewicz* (or *m -Łukasiewicz*) *continued fraction*, or *L-fraction* for short. When $m = 1$ it reduces to the classical J-fraction studied by Flajolet [51].

5 The generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials

In this section we introduce triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, whose first columns are given by the ordinary m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, respectively. These generalized polynomials will play an important role when we discuss production matrices and their connection with total positivity (Sections 8 and 9).

Generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$. Recall that a *partial m -Dyck path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting on the horizontal axis but ending anywhere, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise”] and $(1, -m)$ [“ m -fall”]. A partial m -Dyck path starting at $(0, 0)$ must stay always within the set V_m defined in (2.29): that is, every point (x, y) of the path — and in particular the final point — must satisfy $x = y \bmod m + 1$. We denote by $\mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n, (m+1)k}^{(m)}$ the set of partial m -Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m + 1)n, (m + 1)k)$.

Now let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be an infinite set of indeterminates, and let $S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ be the generating polynomial for partial m -Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m + 1)n, (m + 1)k)$ in which each rise gets weight 1 and each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i . We call the $S_{n,k}^{(m)}$ the **generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials**. Obviously $S_{n,k}^{(m)}$ is nonvanishing only for $0 \leq k \leq n$, and $S_{n,n}^{(m)} = 1$. We therefore have an infinite unit-lower-triangular array $\mathbf{S}^{(m)} = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ in which the first ($k = 0$) column displays the ordinary m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S_{n,0}^{(m)} = S_n^{(m)}$.

Later (in Section 10.5) we will want to study the **row-generating polynomials** associated to the lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}$, namely

$$S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{k=0}^n S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) \xi^k \quad (5.1)$$

where ξ is an indeterminate. More generally, it will prove useful to define [29, 108, 165] the **row-generating matrix** $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\xi) = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi))_{n,k \geq 0}$ by

$$S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=k}^n S_{n,\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) \xi^{\ell-k}, \quad (5.2)$$

which reduces to the row-generating polynomials when $k = 0$. Please note that the definition (5.2) can be written in matrix form as

$$\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\xi) = \mathbf{S}^{(m)} T_\xi \quad (5.3)$$

where T_ξ is the lower-triangular Toeplitz matrix of powers of ξ :

$$(T_\xi)_{\ell k} = \begin{cases} \xi^{\ell-k} & \text{if } \ell \geq k \\ 0 & \text{if } \ell < k \end{cases} \quad (5.4)$$

Generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials. Fix an integer $m \geq 1$. Recall that a *partial m -Schröder path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting on the horizontal axis but ending anywhere, using steps $(1, 1)$ [“rise”], $(1, -m)$ [“ m -fall”] and $(2, -(m-1))$ [“ m -long step”]. A partial m -Schröder path starting at $(0, 0)$ must stay always within the set V_m defined in (2.29). We denote by $\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n, (m+1)k}^{(m)}$ the set of partial m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n, (m+1)k)$.

Now let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta} = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m}$ be infinite sets of indeterminates, and let $T_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ be the generating polynomial for partial m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n, (m+1)k)$ in which each rise gets weight 1, each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i , and each m -long step at height i gets weight δ_{i+1} . We call the $T_{n,k}^{(m)}$ the **generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials**. Once again we have an infinite unit-lower-triangular array $\mathsf{T}^{(m)} = (T_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ in which the first ($k = 0$) column displays the ordinary m -Thron–Rogers polynomials $T_{n,0}^{(m)} = T_n^{(m)}$.

Generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. Fix $1 \leq m \leq \infty$. A *partial m -Lukasiewicz path* is a path in the upper half-plane $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$, starting on the horizontal axis but ending anywhere, using steps $(1, r)$ with $-m \leq r \leq 1$. We denote by $\mathcal{L}_{n,k}^{(m)}$ the set of partial m -Lukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to (n, k) .

Now let $\boldsymbol{\beta} = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ be indeterminates, and let $J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ be the generating polynomial for partial m -Lukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to (n, k) in which each rise gets weight 1, each level step at height i gets weight $\beta_i^{(0)}$, and each ℓ -fall from height i gets weight $\beta_i^{(\ell)}$. We call the $J_{n,k}^{(m)}$ the **generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials**. Once again we have an infinite unit-lower-triangular array $\mathsf{J}^{(m)} = (J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ in which the first ($k = 0$) column displays the ordinary m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $J_{n,0}^{(m)} = J_n^{(m)}$.

Remark. When $m = 1$, the generalized Stieltjes–Rogers and Jacobi–Rogers polynomials play a role that does *not* generalize to $m > 1$: namely, they provide an LDL^T factorization of the Hankel matrices associated to the sequences $\boldsymbol{S} = (S_n(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n \geq 0}$ and $\boldsymbol{J} = (J_n(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}))_{n \geq 0}$ of ordinary Stieltjes–Rogers and Jacobi–Rogers polynomials:

$$H_\infty(\boldsymbol{S}) = \boldsymbol{S} \boldsymbol{D} \boldsymbol{S}^T \quad (5.5)$$

$$H_\infty(\boldsymbol{J}) = \boldsymbol{J} \boldsymbol{D}' \boldsymbol{J}^T \quad (5.6)$$

for suitable diagonal matrices \boldsymbol{D} and \boldsymbol{D}' (the entries of which are products of coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ or $\boldsymbol{\beta}$, respectively). This factorization is due to Stieltjes [153, 154]; see [140] for further discussion. The combinatorial proof of (5.5) [resp. (5.6)] is based on splitting a Dyck path of length $2(n + n')$ [resp. a Motzkin path of length $n + n'$] into its first $2n$ (resp. n) steps and its last $2n'$ (resp. n') steps and then imagining the second part run backwards; this works since the reverse of a Dyck (resp. Motzkin) path is again a Dyck (resp. Motzkin) path, with rises and falls interchanged (this interchange of rises and falls gives rise to the factors $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ or $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ occurring in the matrices \boldsymbol{D} or \boldsymbol{D}'). By contrast, for $m > 1$ the reverse of an m -Dyck (resp. m -Lukasiewicz) path is *not* an m -Dyck (resp. m -Lukasiewicz) path, and this method fails. In fact, it *must* fail,

since it can be shown [140] (based on ideas from [2, 115, 161]) that for a unit-lower-triangular matrix L , there exists a nontrivial diagonal matrix D such that LDL^T is Hankel *if and only if* L is the specialization of the generalized Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $J = (J_{n,k}(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ [that is, the traditional ones with $m = 1$] to some values $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\gamma}$; and for a sequence $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$, the Hankel matrix $H_\infty(\mathbf{a})$ has an LDL^T factorization with L unit-lower-triangular and D nontrivial diagonal *if and only if* \mathbf{a} is the specialization of the Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $\mathbf{J} = (J_n(\boldsymbol{\beta}, \boldsymbol{\gamma}))_{n \geq 0}$ [again the traditional ones with $m = 1$] to some values $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ and $\boldsymbol{\gamma}$. (Here “nontrivial” means that no diagonal entry is zero or a divisor of zero.) Since for $m > 1$ the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $J^{(m)} = (J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ and generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S^{(m)} = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ are *not* of this form — their production matrices are $(m, 1)$ -banded rather than tridiagonal, as we shall see in Section 8.2 — such an LDL^T factorization cannot exist. ■

6 Generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials in terms of ordered trees and forests

We would now like to give a combinatorial interpretation of the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ as the generating polynomials for certain classes of ordered trees, and of the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials $J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ as the generating polynomials for certain classes of ordered forests of ordered trees.

Recall first [147, pp. 294–295] that an *ordered tree* (also called *plane tree*) is an (unlabeled) rooted tree in which the children of each vertex are linearly ordered. An *ordered forest of ordered trees* (also called *plane forest*) is a linearly ordered collection of ordered trees.

There is a well-known bijection from the set of ordered forests of ordered trees with $n + 1$ total vertices and $k + 1$ components onto the set of partial Łukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to (n, k) , which can be described as follows:¹¹

1) Given an ordered forest F of ordered trees with $n + 1$ total vertices, label the vertices with integers $1, \dots, n + 1$ in *depth-first-search order* (more precisely, *preorder traversal*, i.e. parent first, then children from left to right, carried out recursively starting at the root): for each tree this means to walk clockwise around the tree, starting at the root, and to label the vertices in the order in which they are first seen; then do this successively for the trees of the forest [149, pp. 33–34]. Note that all the children of a vertex i have labels $> i$. See Figure 7(a) for an example.

2) Now define a lattice path starting at height $h_0 = k$ and taking steps s_1, \dots, s_{n+1} with $s_i = \deg(i) - 1$, where $\deg(i)$ is the number of children of vertex i . For a vertex j ($1 \leq j \leq n + 1$) belonging to the r th tree ($1 \leq r \leq k + 1$), the height $h_j = k + \sum_{i=1}^j s_i$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r$.¹²

¹¹See [149, pp. 30–36], [101, Chapter 11], [120, section 6.2] and [76, proof of Proposition 3.1].

¹²PROOF: By induction on j . For the base case $j = 1$, the claim is clear. For $j > 1$, vertex j is

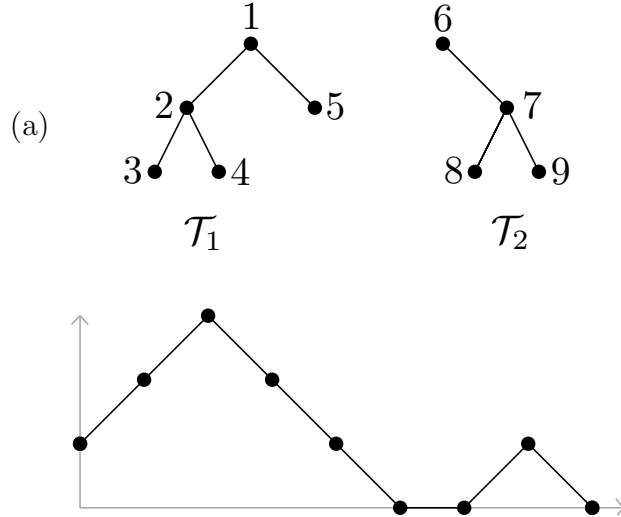


Figure 7. (a) An ordered forest consisting of 2 ordered trees with 9 total vertices, and its depth-first-search labeling. (b) The reversed partial Łukasiewicz path from $(0, 1)$ to $(8, 0)$ onto which it maps.

In particular, $h_j > k - r$ for every vertex of the r th tree other than the last, and $h_j = k - r$ for the last vertex of the r th tree. So $h_1, \dots, h_{n-1} \geq 0$, $h_n = 0$ and $h_{n+1} = -1$. Let us drop the last step: then the walk (h_0, \dots, h_n) is a reversed partial Łukasiewicz path from $(0, k)$ to $(n, 0)$. See Figure 7(b) for an example.

3) We now reverse the path by defining $\widehat{h}_i = h_{n-i}$ and translating its starting abscissa back to the origin: then $(\widehat{h}_0, \dots, \widehat{h}_n) = (h_n, \dots, h_0)$ is a partial Łukasiewicz path from $(0, 0)$ to (n, k) .

4) Now define the *level* of a vertex $j \in [n]$ belonging to the r th tree to be the number of children of the vertices $1, \dots, j-1$ that are $> j$, plus $k+1-r$; it is precisely the height h_{j-1} in the reversed partial Łukasiewicz path, as explained in footnote 12, or equivalently the height \widehat{h}_{n-j+1} in the partial Łukasiewicz path. Now, the step in the partial Łukasiewicz path from $\widehat{h}_{n-j} = h_j$ to $\widehat{h}_{n-j+1} = h_{j-1}$ is an ℓ -fall with $\ell = h_j - h_{j-1} = s_j = \deg(j) - 1$. Therefore, a vertex $j \in [n]$ at level $L = h_{j-1}$ with $\deg(j)$ children corresponds to an ℓ -fall from height $L + \ell$ to height L , where $\ell = \deg(j) - 1$. (If $\ell = -1$ this is of course a rise, and if $\ell = 0$ it is a level step.)

either the child of another node of the r th tree, or else is the root of the r th tree.

(i) In the first case, by the inductive hypothesis, h_{j-1} is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j-1\}$ whose labels are $\geq j$, plus $k-r$; so $h_{j-1} - 1$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j-1\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k-r$. Vertex j has $\deg(j)$ children, all of which have labels $> j$; so $h_j = h_{j-1} + s_j = h_{j-1} - 1 + \deg(j)$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k-r$.

(ii) In the second case, vertex $j-1$ is the last vertex of the $(r-1)$ st tree, and none of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j-1\}$ have a child with label $\geq j$ (by definition of the labeling); so $h_{j-1} = k - (r-1)$. On the other hand, all of the children of vertex j have labels $> j$, and $h_j = h_{j-1} + \deg(j) - 1 = k - r + \deg(j)$.

Finally, vertex $n + 1$ is always a leaf. We have therefore proven:

Proposition 6.1. *Let $\beta = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{i \geq \ell \geq 0}$ be indeterminates. Then the generalized ∞ -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\beta)$ is the generating polynomial for ordered forests of ordered trees with $n + 1$ total vertices and $k + 1$ components in which each vertex at level L with c children gets weight 1 if it is a leaf ($c = 0$) and weight $\beta_{L+c-1}^{(c-1)}$ otherwise.*

The m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with $m < \infty$ correspond to the forests in which each vertex has at most $m + 1$ children.

7 Contraction formulae for m -branched continued fractions

In this section we define a natural mapping from m -Dyck paths onto m -Łukasiewicz paths, based on grouping steps in nonoverlapping groups of $m + 1$ steps; for $m = 1$ this reduces to Viennot’s [157, pp. V-30–V-32] mapping of Dyck paths onto Motzkin paths by grouping pairs of steps. We will then use this mapping to derive a formula for rewriting the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials as m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials with suitably “contracted” weights; for $m = 1$ this reduces to the classical formula for the “even contraction” of an S-fraction to a J-fraction [159, p. 21] [157, p. V-31]. We will also extend this construction to a subclass of m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, and to the generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials.

Finally, we will generalize to $m > 1$ the classical formula for the “odd contraction” of an S-fraction to a J-fraction [157, p. V-33]; and likewise for the other polynomials.

7.1 Generalization of even contraction

The combinatorial essence of even contraction is contained in the following easy lemma:

Lemma 7.1. *Fix integers $m \geq 1$ and $n \geq 0$, and consider the mapping of the path $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_{(m+1)n})$ to the path $\omega' = (\omega'_0, \dots, \omega'_n)$ defined by*

$$\omega'_i = \frac{\omega_{(m+1)i}}{m+1} \tag{7.1}$$

[here $\omega_i \in \mathbb{N}$ denotes the height of the path at “time” i , and likewise for ω'_i]. This mapping (which we denote $\Pi_n^{(m)}$) is a surjection from the set $\mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)}$ of m -Dyck paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n, 0)$ onto the set $\mathcal{L}_n^{(m)}$ of m -Łukasiewicz paths from $(0, 0)$ to $(n, 0)$.

PROOF. Here ω'_i is an integer because the path ω must stay always within the set V_m defined in (2.29); so when the time is a multiple of $m + 1$, the height must also be a multiple of $m + 1$. Moreover, from the hypothesis $\omega_i - \omega_{i-1} \in \{-m, +1\}$ it follows that $-m \leq \omega'_i - \omega'_{i-1} \leq 1$ and hence that $\omega'_i - \omega'_{i-1} \in \{-m, -(m-1), \dots, 0, +1\}$; so

ω' is an m -Łukasiewicz path. Finally, it is easy to see that every value $\omega'_i - \omega'_{i-1} \in \{-m, -(m-1), \dots, 0, +1\}$ is achievable; so the mapping is a surjection. \square

To derive the formula for contraction of an m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial to an m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial, we now need only compute, for each path $\omega' \in \mathcal{L}_n^{(m)}$, the total weight of paths $\omega \in (\Pi_n^{(m)})^{-1}(\omega')$ when each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i . It is convenient to state this contraction formula in matrix form. We define some special matrices $M = (m_{ij})_{i,j \geq 0}$, as follows:

- $L(s_1, s_2, \dots)$ is the lower-bidiagonal matrix with 1 on the diagonal and s_1, s_2, \dots on the subdiagonal:

$$L(s_1, s_2, \dots) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & \\ s_1 & 1 & & & & \\ & s_2 & 1 & & & \\ & & s_3 & 1 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \ddots & \\ & & & & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix}. \quad (7.2)$$

- $U^*(s_1, s_2, \dots)$ is the upper-bidiagonal matrix with 1 on the superdiagonal and s_1, s_2, \dots on the diagonal:

$$U^*(s_1, s_2, \dots) = \begin{bmatrix} s_1 & 1 & & & & \\ & s_2 & 1 & & & \\ & & s_3 & 1 & & \\ & & & s_4 & 1 & \\ & & & & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix}. \quad (7.3)$$

- $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is the $(m, 1)$ -banded lower-Hessenberg matrix with 1 on the superdiagonal, $\beta_0^{(0)}, \beta_1^{(0)}, \dots$ on the diagonal, $\beta_1^{(1)}, \beta_2^{(1)}, \dots$ on the first subdiagonal, $\beta_2^{(2)}, \beta_3^{(2)}, \dots$ on the second subdiagonal, etc., and in general

$$P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})_{ij} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } j = i + 1 \\ \beta_i^{(i-j)} & \text{if } i - m \leq j \leq i \\ 0 & \text{if } j < i - m \end{cases} \quad (7.4)$$

or in other words

$$P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) = \begin{bmatrix} \beta_0^{(0)} & 1 & & & & \\ \beta_1^{(1)} & \beta_1^{(0)} & 1 & & & \\ \beta_2^{(2)} & \beta_2^{(1)} & \beta_2^{(0)} & 1 & & \\ \beta_3^{(3)} & \beta_3^{(2)} & \beta_3^{(1)} & \beta_3^{(0)} & 1 & \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \quad (7.5)$$

Of course, $P^{(\infty)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is simply the generic unit-lower-Hessenberg matrix.

The contraction formula is then the following:

Proposition 7.2 (Contraction formula for m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials).

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be indeterminates. Then the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ equals the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ where $\boldsymbol{\beta} = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ are defined by the matrix equality $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) = P^{(m)S}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ with

$$P^{(m)S}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} L(\alpha_{m+1}, \alpha_{2m+2}, \alpha_{3m+3}, \dots) L(\alpha_{m+2}, \alpha_{2m+3}, \alpha_{3m+4}, \dots) \cdots \\ L(\alpha_{2m}, \alpha_{3m+1}, \alpha_{4m+2}, \dots) U^*(\alpha_m, \alpha_{2m+1}, \alpha_{3m+2}, \dots), \quad (7.6)$$

that is, the product of m factors L and one factor U^* .

For instance, for $m = 1$ we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} \alpha_1 & 1 & & & \\ \alpha_1 \alpha_2 & \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 & 1 & & \\ & \alpha_3 \alpha_4 & \alpha_4 + \alpha_5 & 1 & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & \\ \alpha_2 & 1 & & & \\ & \alpha_4 & 1 & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \alpha_1 & 1 & & & \\ & \alpha_3 & 1 & & \\ & & \alpha_5 & 1 & \\ & & & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix}, \quad (7.7)$$

while for $m = 2$ we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} & \alpha_2 & & 1 & & & \\ \alpha_2 \alpha_3 + \alpha_2 \alpha_4 & & \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 + \alpha_5 & & 1 & & \\ & \alpha_2 \alpha_4 \alpha_6 & \alpha_4 \alpha_6 + \alpha_5 \alpha_6 + \alpha_5 \alpha_7 & \alpha_6 + \alpha_7 + \alpha_8 & 1 & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \end{bmatrix} \\ = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & & \\ \alpha_3 & 1 & & & & & \\ & \alpha_6 & 1 & & & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & & & \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & & \\ \alpha_4 & 1 & & & & & \\ & \alpha_7 & 1 & & & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & & & \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \alpha_2 & 1 & & & & & \\ & \alpha_5 & 1 & & & & \\ & & \alpha_8 & 1 & & & \\ & & & \ddots & \ddots & & \end{bmatrix}. \quad (7.8)$$

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 7.2. We need to enumerate the $(m+1)$ -step walks in \mathbb{N} going from height $(m+1)i$ to height $(m+1)j$, using steps $+1$ and $-m$, with weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$; we will show that the right-hand side of (7.6) does the job. The first step starts at height $(m+1)i$ and uses the matrix $L(\alpha_{m+1}, \alpha_{2m+2}, \dots)$: it is either a rise, using the diagonal ($i \rightarrow i$) with weight 1, or an m -fall, using the subdiagonal ($i \rightarrow i-1$) with weight $\alpha_{(m+1)i}$. We are now at height $(m+1)i+1$ [where i is the “new” value, i.e. either the original i or the original i minus 1], and the next step uses the matrix $L(\alpha_{m+2}, \alpha_{2m+3}, \dots)$ in an analogous way; and so forth. Finally, at the $(m+1)$ st step, we are at height $(m+1)i+m$ and we use the matrix $U^*(\alpha_m, \alpha_{2m+1}, \dots)$: this step is either a rise, using the superdiagonal ($i \rightarrow i+1$) with weight 1, or else an m -fall, using the diagonal ($i \rightarrow i$) with weight $\alpha_{(m+1)i+m}$. The resulting value of j is now interpreted as height $(m+1)j$. \square

An identical construction works for the generalized polynomials. For any pair $0 \leq k \leq n$, the same formula (7.1) defines a surjection $\Pi_{n,k}^{(m)}: \mathcal{D}_{(m+1)n, (m+1)k}^{(m)} \rightarrow \mathcal{L}_{n,k}^{(m)}$, and the computation of the weights is identical to the case $k=0$. We have therefore proven:

Proposition 7.3 (Contraction formula for generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be indeterminates. Then the generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial $S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\alpha)$ equals the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\beta)$ where β are defined by $P^{(m)}(\beta) = P^{(m)S}(\alpha)$ and (7.6).*

Let us now discuss the extension of this construction to the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials. We would like to use the same formula (7.1) also when ω is an m -Schröder path. There is, however, a danger: if the m -Schröder path takes an m -long step at a time $(m+1)i-1$, then the height $\omega_{(m+1)i}$ is not defined. Since an m -Schröder path must stay always within the set V_m defined in (2.29), the time (i.e. abscissa) equals $m \bmod m+1$ if and only if the height equals $m \bmod m+1$. We therefore define $\mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)'}$ to be the set of m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n, 0)$ in which there are no m -long steps starting at a height equal to $m \bmod m+1$. Then (7.1) defines a surjection $\tilde{\Pi}_n^{(m)}: \mathcal{S}_{(m+1)n}^{(m)'} \rightarrow \mathcal{L}_n^{(m)}$, which extends $\Pi_n^{(m)}$.

At the level of the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, forbidding m -long steps starting at a height $m \bmod m+1$ corresponds to setting $\delta_i = 0$ whenever i is a multiple of $m+1$. For the remaining indeterminates we write $\delta' = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m, i \neq 0 \bmod m+1}$, and we write $T_n^{(m)'(\alpha, \delta')}$ for $T_n^{(m)}(\alpha, \delta)$ specialized to $\delta_i = 0$ whenever i is a multiple of $m+1$. We call $T_n^{(m)'(\alpha, \delta')}$ the **restricted m -Thron–Rogers polynomial**.

To derive the formula for contraction of a restricted m -Thron–Rogers polynomial to an m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial, we now need to compute, for each path $\omega' \in \mathcal{L}_n^{(m)}$, the total weight of paths $\omega \in (\tilde{\Pi}_n^{(m)})^{-1}(\omega')$ when each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i and each m -long step starting at height i ($\neq m \bmod m+1$) gets weight δ_{i+1} . Unfortunately, we have been unable to find a compact matrix formulation analogous to (7.6). We therefore state the result combinatorially:

Proposition 7.4 (Contraction formula for restricted m -Thron–Rogers polynomials).

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\delta' = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m, i \neq 0 \bmod m+1}$ be indeterminates. Define the matrix $P^{(m)RT}(\alpha, \delta')$ by specifying that the matrix element $P^{(m)RT}(\alpha, \delta')_{ij}$ is the total weight for walks from $(0, (m+1)i)$ to $(m+1, (m+1)j)$ in the graph \tilde{G}_m — or equivalently in the graph $\tilde{G}_m \cap ([0, m+1] \times \mathbb{N})$ — in which each rise gets weight 1, each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i and each m -long step starting at height i gets weight δ_{i+1} . [Note that no such walk can have an m -long step starting at a height equal to $m \bmod m+1$.] Then the restricted m -Thron–Rogers polynomial $T_n^{(m)'(\alpha, \delta')}$ equals the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_n^{(m)}(\beta)$ where $\beta = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ are defined by the matrix equality $P^{(m)}(\beta) = P^{(m)RT}(\alpha, \delta')$.

An identical construction works for the generalized polynomials, and we have:

Proposition 7.5 (Contraction formula for restricted generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ and $\delta' = (\delta_i)_{i \geq m, i \neq 0 \bmod m+1}$ be indeterminates. Define the matrix $P^{(m)RT}(\alpha, \delta')$ and the coefficients β as in Proposition 7.4. Then the restricted generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomial $T_{n,k}^{(m)'(\alpha, \delta')}$ equals the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\beta)$.*

7.2 Generalization of odd contraction

We shall also need a generalization to $m > 1$ of the odd contraction [157, p. V-33]. Let us begin with the Stieltjes case. An m -Dyck path of length $(m+1)n$ with $n \geq 1$ necessarily begins with m rises and ends with an m -fall. We can therefore remove these steps and define

$$\omega''_i = \frac{\omega_{(m+1)i+m} - m}{m+1}, \quad (7.9)$$

which are nonnegative integers satisfying $\omega''_0 = \omega''_{n-1} = 0$ and $-m \leq \omega''_i - \omega''_{i-1} \leq 1$. The path $\omega'' = (\omega''_0, \dots, \omega''_{n-1})$ is therefore an m -Łukasiewicz path of length $n-1$.

Proposition 7.6 (Odd contraction formula for m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials).

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ be indeterminates. Then for $n \geq 1$ we have

$$S_n^{(m)}(\alpha) = \alpha_m J_{n-1}^{(m)}(\beta') \quad (7.10)$$

where $\beta' = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ are defined by $P^{(m)}(\beta') = P^{(m)S'}(\alpha)$ and

$$P^{(m)S'}(\alpha) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} U^*(\alpha_m, \alpha_{2m+1}, \alpha_{3m+2}, \dots) L(\alpha_{m+1}, \alpha_{2m+2}, \alpha_{3m+3}, \dots) \cdots \\ L(\alpha_{m+2}, \alpha_{2m+3}, \alpha_{3m+4}, \dots) L(\alpha_{2m}, \alpha_{3m+1}, \alpha_{4m+2}, \dots). \quad (7.11)$$

Here (7.11) is the same as (7.6) except that the factor U^* is in first position rather than last. Thus, for $m = 1$ we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 & 1 & & & \\ \alpha_2 \alpha_3 & \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 & 1 & & \\ & \alpha_4 \alpha_5 & \alpha_5 + \alpha_6 & 1 & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha_1 & 1 & & & \\ & \alpha_3 & 1 & & \\ & & \alpha_5 & 1 & \\ & & & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & \\ \alpha_2 & 1 & & & \\ & \alpha_4 & 1 & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix}, \quad (7.12)$$

while for $m = 2$ we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 & & 1 & & & \\ \alpha_3 \alpha_5 + \alpha_4 \alpha_5 + \alpha_4 \alpha_6 & & \alpha_5 + \alpha_6 + \alpha_7 & & 1 & \\ & \alpha_4 \alpha_6 \alpha_8 & \alpha_6 \alpha_8 + \alpha_7 \alpha_8 + \alpha_7 \alpha_9 & \alpha_8 + \alpha_9 + \alpha_{10} & 1 & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \\ = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha_2 & 1 & & & & \\ & \alpha_5 & 1 & & & \\ & & \alpha_8 & 1 & & \\ & & & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & \\ \alpha_3 & 1 & & & & \\ & \alpha_6 & 1 & & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & \\ \alpha_4 & 1 & & & & \\ & \alpha_7 & 1 & & & \\ & & \ddots & \ddots & & \ddots \end{bmatrix}. \quad (7.13)$$

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 7.6. The proof is analogous to that of Proposition 7.2, but with a few changes. We need to enumerate the $(m+1)$ -step walks in \mathbb{N} going from height $(m+1)i+m$ to height $(m+1)j+m$, using steps $+1$ and $-m$, with weights α ; we will show that the right-hand side of (7.11) does the job. The first step starts at height $(m+1)i+m$ and uses the matrix $U^*(\alpha_m, \alpha_{2m+1}, \dots)$: it is either a rise, using

the superdiagonal ($i \rightarrow i + 1$) with weight 1, or an m -fall, using the diagonal ($i \rightarrow i$) with weight $\alpha_{(m+1)i+m}$. We are now at height $(m + 1)i$ [where i is the “new” value, i.e. either the original i plus 1 or the original i], and the next step uses the matrix $L(\alpha_{m+1}, \alpha_{2m+2}, \dots)$ exactly as in the proof of Proposition 7.2; and similarly for the remaining steps. After the $(m + 1)$ st step, we are at height $(m + 1)j + m$. \square

Remarks. 1. For $m > 1$ the terminology “odd contraction” is of course a misnomer; it should be called “ $m \bmod m + 1$ contraction”. But since this is a mouthful, we prefer the shorter term “odd contraction”.

2. There does not seem to exist any analogous contraction formula for values of $i \bmod m + 1$ other than $i = 0$ and $i = m$. For suppose that we extract from an m -Dyck path of length $(m + 1)n$ the first i steps and the last $m + 1 - i$ steps, where $1 \leq i \leq m - 1$. The first i steps must indeed be rises, and the last step must be an m -fall; but the $m - i$ penultimate steps could be either rises or m -falls. As a result, the walk with the starting and ending steps deleted must start at height i but could end at various heights equal to $i \bmod m + 1$, not only i .

3. The odd contraction formula (Proposition 7.6) will play an important role in our proof of Theorem 12.11 below. \blacksquare

There is also a version of odd contraction for m -Thron–Rogers polynomials restricted to have $\delta_i = 0$ whenever $i = m \bmod m + 1$ (so as to forbid m -long steps starting at a height equal to $m - 1 \bmod m + 1$). We leave the details to the reader.

8 Production matrices

The method of production matrices [35, 36] has become in recent years an important tool in enumerative combinatorics. In the special case of a tridiagonal production matrix, this construction goes back to Stieltjes’ [153, 154] work on continued fractions: the production matrix of a classical S-fraction or J-fraction is tridiagonal. In the present paper, by contrast, we shall need production matrices that are lower-Hessenberg (i.e. vanish above the first superdiagonal) but are not in general tridiagonal. We therefore begin by reviewing briefly the basic theory of production matrices. We then exhibit the production matrices associated to the lower-triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. The important connection of production matrices with total positivity will be treated in the next section.

8.1 General theory of production matrices

Let $P = (p_{ij})_{i,j \geq 0}$ be an infinite matrix with entries in a commutative ring R . In order that powers of P be well-defined, we shall assume that P is either row-finite (i.e. has only finitely many nonzero entries in each row) or column-finite.

Let us now define an infinite matrix $A = (a_{nk})_{n,k \geq 0}$ by

$$a_{nk} = (P^n)_{0k} \tag{8.1}$$

(in particular, $a_{0k} = \delta_{0k}$). Writing out the matrix multiplications explicitly, we have

$$a_{nk} = \sum_{i_1, \dots, i_{n-1}} p_{0i_1} p_{i_1 i_2} p_{i_2 i_3} \cdots p_{i_{n-2} i_{n-1}} p_{i_{n-1} k}, \quad (8.2)$$

so that a_{nk} is the total weight for all n -step walks in \mathbb{N} from $i_0 = 0$ to $i_n = k$, in which the weight of a walk is the product of the weights of its steps, and a step from i to j gets a weight p_{ij} . Yet another equivalent formulation is to define the entries a_{nk} by the recurrence

$$a_{nk} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} a_{n-1, i} p_{ik} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (8.3)$$

with the initial condition $a_{0k} = \delta_{0k}$.

We call P the **production matrix** and A the **output matrix**, and we write $A = \mathcal{O}(P)$. Note that if P is row-finite, then so is $\mathcal{O}(P)$; if P is lower-Hessenberg, then $\mathcal{O}(P)$ is lower-triangular; if P is lower-Hessenberg with invertible superdiagonal entries, then $\mathcal{O}(P)$ is lower-triangular with invertible diagonal entries; and if P is unit-lower-Hessenberg (i.e. lower-Hessenberg with entries 1 on the superdiagonal), then $\mathcal{O}(P)$ is unit-lower-triangular. In all the applications in this paper, P will be unit-lower-Hessenberg.

The matrix P can also be interpreted as the adjacency matrix for a weighted directed graph on the vertex set \mathbb{N} (where the edge ij is omitted whenever $p_{ij} = 0$). Then P is row-finite (resp. column-finite) if and only if every vertex has finite out-degree (resp. finite in-degree).

This iteration process can be given a compact matrix formulation. Let $\Delta = (\delta_{i+1, j})_{i, j \geq 0}$ be the matrix with 1 on the superdiagonal and 0 elsewhere. Then for any matrix M with rows indexed by \mathbb{N} , the product ΔM is simply M with its zeroth row removed and all other rows shifted upwards. (Some authors use the notation $\overline{M} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \Delta M$.) The recurrence (8.3) can then be written as

$$\Delta \mathcal{O}(P) = \mathcal{O}(P) P. \quad (8.4)$$

It follows that if A is a row-finite matrix that has a row-finite inverse A^{-1} and has first row $a_{0k} = \delta_{0k}$, then $P = A^{-1} \Delta A$ is the unique matrix such that $A = \mathcal{O}(P)$. This holds, in particular, if A is lower-triangular with invertible diagonal entries and $a_{00} = 1$; then A^{-1} is lower-triangular and $P = A^{-1} \Delta A$ is lower-Hessenberg. And if A is unit-lower-triangular, then $P = A^{-1} \Delta A$ is unit-lower-Hessenberg.

Let us record, for future use, the following easy fact:

Lemma 8.1 (Production matrix of a product). *Let A and B be infinite lower-triangular matrices (with entries in a commutative ring R) with invertible diagonal entries. Then A has production matrix $P_A = A^{-1} \Delta A$, and AB has production matrix $P_{AB} = (AB)^{-1} \Delta (AB) = B^{-1} P_A B$.*

8.2 Production matrices for generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials

It is now almost trivial to state the production matrices associated to the lower-triangular arrays of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–

Rogers polynomials:

Proposition 8.2 (Production matrices for generalized m -J-R, m -S-R and m -T-R).

- (a) For the unit-lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{J}^{(m)} = (J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials, the production matrix is $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ defined in (7.5).
- (b) For the unit-lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)} = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, the production matrix is $P^{(m)\bar{\mathbf{S}}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ defined in (7.6).
- (c) For the unit-lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{T}^{(m)'} = (T_{n,k}^{(m)' }(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}'))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of restricted generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, the production matrix is $P^{(m)\text{RT}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}')$ defined in Proposition 7.4.

PROOF. (a) is immediate from the definitions. (b) follows from (a) together with Proposition 7.3, while (c) follows from (a) together with Proposition 7.5. \square

We can now give the promised algebraic proof of Proposition 3.1 for the special case in which the set I is periodic of period $m + 1$:

ALGEBRAIC PROOF OF PROPOSITION 3.1 (SPECIAL CASE). Consider the production matrix (7.6) with m replaced by m' and $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ by $\boldsymbol{\alpha}'$. When I is periodic of period $m + 1$, exactly $m' - m$ of the factors $L(\dots)$ become the identity matrix, so that we get the production matrix for an m -branched S-fraction with weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$. (Note that since $m' \notin I$, the factor $U^*(\dots)$ is unaltered.) \square

9 Total positivity

In this section — which is the theoretical heart of the paper — we prove the coefficientwise total positivity of the Hankel matrices associated to the m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, and of the lower-triangular matrices of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials. For each Stieltjes result we will give two proofs: a combinatorial proof using the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma, and algebraic proof using the theory of production matrices. For the Thron results we will have only a combinatorial proof. For the case $m = 1$, these proofs can be found already in [140].

We begin (Section 9.1) by recalling some general facts about partially ordered commutative rings and total positivity. Next (Section 9.2) we present the fundamental theorems concerning production matrices and total positivity [140]; these will be a key tool in the remainder of the paper. Then we state our main results (Section 9.3) and give the promised combinatorial and algebraic proofs (Sections 9.4 and 9.5).

9.1 Preliminaries concerning partially ordered commutative rings and total positivity

In this paper all rings will be assumed to have an identity element 1 and to be nontrivial ($1 \neq 0$).

A *partially ordered commutative ring* is a pair (R, \mathcal{P}) where R is a commutative ring and \mathcal{P} is a subset of R satisfying

- (a) $0, 1 \in \mathcal{P}$.
- (b) If $a, b \in \mathcal{P}$, then $a + b \in \mathcal{P}$ and $ab \in \mathcal{P}$.
- (c) $\mathcal{P} \cap (-\mathcal{P}) = \{0\}$.

We call \mathcal{P} the *nonnegative elements* of R , and we define a partial order on R (compatible with the ring structure) by writing $a \leq b$ as a synonym for $b - a \in \mathcal{P}$. Please note that, unlike the practice in real algebraic geometry [26, 94, 106, 121], we do *not* assume here that squares are nonnegative; indeed, this property fails completely for our prototypical example, the ring of polynomials with the coefficientwise order, since $(1 - x)^2 = 1 - 2x + x^2 \not\geq 0$.

Now let (R, \mathcal{P}) be a partially ordered commutative ring and let $\mathbf{x} = \{x_i\}_{i \in I}$ be a collection of indeterminates. In the polynomial ring $R[\mathbf{x}]$ and the formal-power-series ring $R[[\mathbf{x}]]$, let $\mathcal{P}[\mathbf{x}]$ and $\mathcal{P}[[\mathbf{x}]]$ be the subsets consisting of polynomials (resp. series) with nonnegative coefficients. Then $(R[\mathbf{x}], \mathcal{P}[\mathbf{x}])$ and $(R[[\mathbf{x}]], \mathcal{P}[[\mathbf{x}]])$ are partially ordered commutative rings; we refer to this as the *coefficientwise order* on $R[\mathbf{x}]$ and $R[[\mathbf{x}]]$.

A (finite or infinite) matrix with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring is called *totally positive* (TP) if all its minors are nonnegative; it is called *totally positive of order r* (TP_r) if all its minors of size $\leq r$ are nonnegative. It follows immediately from the Cauchy–Binet formula that the product of two TP (resp. TP_r) matrices is TP (resp. TP_r).

We say that a sequence $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring is *Hankel-totally positive* (resp. *Hankel-totally positive of order r*) if its associated infinite Hankel matrix $H_\infty(\mathbf{a}) = (a_{i+j})_{i, j \geq 0}$ is TP (resp. TP_r).

We will need a few easy facts about the total positivity of special matrices.

Lemma 9.1 (Bidiagonal matrices). *Let A be a matrix with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring, with the property that all its nonzero entries belong to two consecutive diagonals. Then A is totally positive if and only if all its entries are nonnegative.*

PROOF. The nonnegativity of the entries (i.e. TP_1) is obviously a necessary condition for TP. Conversely, for a matrix of this type it is easy to see that every nonzero minor is simply a product of some entries. \square

Lemma 9.2 (Toeplitz matrix of powers). *Let R be a partially ordered commutative ring, let $\xi \in R$, and let T_ξ be the lower-triangular Toeplitz matrix of powers of ξ [cf. (5.4)]. Then every minor of T_ξ is either zero or else a power of ξ . Hence T_ξ is TP $\iff T_\xi$ is TP₁ $\iff \xi \geq 0$.*

In particular, if ξ is an indeterminate, then T_ξ is totally positive in the ring $\mathbb{Z}[\xi]$ equipped with the coefficientwise order.

PROOF. Consider a minor $A = (T_\xi)_{IJ}$ with rows $I = \{i_1 < \dots < i_k\}$ and columns $J = \{j_1 < \dots < j_k\}$. We will prove the claim by induction on k . It is trivial if $k = 0$ or 1. If $A_{12} = A_{22} = 0$, then $A_{1s} = A_{2s} = 0$ for all $s \geq 2$ by definition of T_ξ , and $\det A = 0$. If A_{12} and A_{22} are both nonzero, then the first column of A is $\xi^{j_2-j_1}$ times the second column, and again $\det A = 0$. Finally, if $A_{12} = 0$ and $A_{22} \neq 0$ (by definition of T_ξ this is the only other possibility), then $A_{1s} = 0$ for all $s \geq 2$; we then replace the first column of A by the first column minus $\xi^{j_2-j_1}$ times the second column, so that the new first column has $\xi^{i_1-j_1}$ in its first entry (or zero if $i_1 < j_1$) and zeroes elsewhere. Then $\det A$ equals $\xi^{i_1-j_1}$ times the determinant of its last $k-1$ rows and columns, so the claim follows from the inductive hypothesis. \square

9.2 Production matrices and total positivity

Let $P = (p_{ij})_{i,j \geq 0}$ be a matrix with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring R . We will use P as a production matrix; let $A = \mathcal{O}(P)$ be the corresponding output matrix. As before, we assume that P is either row-finite or column-finite.

When P is totally positive, it turns out [140] that the output matrix $\mathcal{O}(P)$ has *two* total-positivity properties: firstly, it is totally positive; and secondly, its zeroth column is Hankel-totally positive. Since [140] is not yet publicly available, we shall present briefly here (with proof) the main results that will be needed in the sequel.

The fundamental fact that drives the whole theory is the following:

Proposition 9.3 (Minors of the output matrix). *Every $k \times k$ minor of the output matrix $A = \mathcal{O}(P)$ can be written as a sum of products of minors of size $\leq k$ of the production matrix P .*

In this proposition the matrix elements $\mathbf{p} = \{p_{ij}\}_{i,j \geq 0}$ should be interpreted in the first instance as indeterminates: for instance, we can fix a row-finite or column-finite set $S \subseteq \mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N}$ and define the matrix $P^S = (p_{ij}^S)_{i,j \in \mathbb{N}}$ with entries

$$p_{ij}^S = \begin{cases} p_{ij} & \text{if } (i, j) \in S \\ 0 & \text{if } (i, j) \notin S \end{cases} \quad (9.1)$$

Then the entries (and hence also the minors) of both P and A belong to the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{p}]$, and the assertion of Proposition 9.3 makes sense. Of course, we can subsequently specialize the indeterminates \mathbf{p} to values in any commutative ring R .

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 9.3. Consider any minor of A involving only the rows 0 through N . We will prove the assertion of the Proposition by induction on N . The

statement is obvious for $N = 0$. For $N \geq 1$, let A_N be the matrix consisting of rows 0 through $N - 1$ of A , and let A'_N be the matrix consisting of rows 1 through N of A . Then we have

$$A'_N = A_N P . \quad (9.2)$$

If the minor in question does not involve row 0, then obviously it involves only rows 1 through N . If the minor in question does involve row 0, then it is either zero (in case it does not involve column 0) or else equal to a minor of A (of one size smaller) that involves only rows 1 through N (since $a_{0k} = \delta_{0k}$). Either way it is a minor of A'_N ; but by (9.2) and the Cauchy–Binet formula, every minor of A'_N is a sum of products of minors (of the same size) of A_N and P . This completes the inductive step. \square

If we now specialize the indeterminates \mathbf{p} to values in some partially ordered commutative ring R , we can immediately conclude:

Theorem 9.4 (Total positivity of the output matrix). *Let P be an infinite matrix that is either row-finite or column-finite, with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring R . If P is totally positive of order r , then so is $A = \mathcal{O}(P)$.*

Remarks. 1. In the case $R = \mathbb{R}$, Theorem 9.4 is due to Karlin [85, pp. 132–134]; see also [119, Theorem 1.11]. Karlin’s proof is different from ours.

2. Our quick inductive proof of Proposition 9.3 follows an idea of one of us (Zhu) [163, proof of Theorem 2.1], which was in turn inspired in part by Aigner [1, pp. 45–46]. The same idea recurs in recent work of several authors [164, Theorem 2.1] [30, Theorem 2.1(i)] [31, Theorem 2.3(i)] [97, Theorem 2.1]. However, all of these results concerned only special cases: [1, 31, 97, 163] treated the case in which the production matrix P is tridiagonal; [164] treated a (special) case in which P is upper bidiagonal; [30] treated the case in which P is the production matrix of a Riordan array. But the argument is in fact completely general, as we have just seen; there is no need to assume any special form for the matrix P . \blacksquare

Now define $\mathcal{o}_0(P)$ to be the zeroth-column sequence of $\mathcal{O}(P)$, i.e.

$$\mathcal{o}_0(P)_n \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \mathcal{O}(P)_{n0} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (P^n)_{00} . \quad (9.3)$$

Then the Hankel matrix of $\mathcal{o}_0(P)$ has matrix elements

$$\begin{aligned} H_\infty(\mathcal{o}_0(P))_{nn'} &= \mathcal{o}_0(P)_{n+n'} = (P^{n+n'})_{00} = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (P^n)_{0k} (P^{n'})_{k0} = \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (P^n)_{0k} ((P^T)^{n'})_{0k} = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{O}(P)_{nk} \mathcal{O}(P^T)_{n'k} = [\mathcal{O}(P) \mathcal{O}(P^T)^T]_{nn'} . \end{aligned} \quad (9.4)$$

(Note that the sum over k has only finitely many nonzero terms: if P is row-finite, then there are finitely many nonzero $(P^n)_{0k}$, while if P is column-finite, there are finitely many nonzero $(P^{n'})_{k0}$.) We have therefore proven:

Lemma 9.5 (Identity for Hankel matrix of the zeroth column). *Let P be a row-finite or column-finite matrix with entries in a commutative ring R . Then*

$$H_\infty(\mathcal{O}_0(P)) = \mathcal{O}(P) \mathcal{O}(P^T)^T. \quad (9.5)$$

Remark. If P is row-finite, then $\mathcal{O}(P)$ is row-finite; $\mathcal{O}(P^T)$ need not be row- or column-finite, but the product $\mathcal{O}(P) \mathcal{O}(P^T)^T$ is anyway well-defined. ■

Combining Proposition 9.3 with Lemma 9.5 and the Cauchy–Binet formula, we obtain:

Corollary 9.6 (Hankel minors of the zeroth column). *Every $k \times k$ minor of the infinite Hankel matrix $H_\infty(\mathcal{O}_0(P)) = ((P^{n+n'})_{00})_{n,n' \geq 0}$ can be written as a sum of products of the minors of size $\leq k$ of the production matrix P .*

And specializing the indeterminates \mathbf{p} to nonnegative elements in a partially ordered commutative ring, in such a way that P is row-finite or column-finite, we deduce:

Theorem 9.7 (Hankel-total positivity of the zeroth column). *Let $P = (p_{ij})_{i,j \geq 0}$ be an infinite row-finite or column-finite matrix with entries in a partially ordered commutative ring R , and define the infinite Hankel matrix $H_\infty(\mathcal{O}_0(P)) = ((P^{n+n'})_{00})_{n,n' \geq 0}$. If P is totally positive of order r , then so is $H_\infty(\mathcal{O}_0(P))$.*

9.3 Statement of results for m -Stieltjes–Rogers, m -Thron–Rogers and m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials

Our first main result concerns the Hankel-total positivity of the m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials:

Theorem 9.8 (Hankel-total positivity for m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials). *For each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $\mathbf{S}^{(m)} = (S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n \geq 0}$ of m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is a Hankel-totally positive sequence in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.*

Theorem 9.9 (Hankel-total positivity for m -Thron–Rogers polynomials). *For each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $\mathbf{T}^{(m)} = (T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{n \geq 0}$ of m -Thron–Rogers polynomials is a Hankel-totally positive sequence in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.*

Of course, it suffices to prove Theorem 9.9, since Theorem 9.8 is simply the specialization to $\boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{0}$. We will prove Theorem 9.9 in Section 9.4 by a combinatorial method using the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma. We will also give a second proof of Theorem 9.8 in Section 9.5, based on the theory of production matrices.

Note also that, as a corollary of Theorems 9.8 and 9.9, we can substitute for $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}$ nonnegative elements of any partially ordered commutative ring R , and the resulting sequence $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}$ or $\mathbf{T}^{(m)}$ will be Hankel-totally positive in R . This will, in

fact, be our principal method for constructing examples of Hankel-totally positive sequences.

Our second main result concerns the total positivity of the lower-triangular matrices of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers and m -Thron–Rogers polynomials:

Theorem 9.10 (Total positivity for generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials).
The lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)} = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is totally positive in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.

Theorem 9.11 (Total positivity for generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials).
The lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{T}^{(m)} = (T_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials is totally positive in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.

Once again, it suffices to prove Theorem 9.11, since Theorem 9.10 is the specialization to $\boldsymbol{\delta} = \mathbf{0}$. We will prove Theorem 9.11 in Section 9.4 using the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma, and will give a second proof of Theorem 9.10 in Section 9.5 using the theory of production matrices.

The results on Hankel-total positivity in Theorems 9.8 and 9.9 can be extended as follows. Recall from Section 2 that the coefficient of t^n in the product $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ is the generating polynomial for partial m -Dyck or m -Schröder paths from $(0, 0)$ to $((m+1)n + \ell, \ell)$ [with the usual weights], which we denote by $S_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ or $T_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$, respectively. We then have Hankel-total positivity in the Stieltjes case for $0 \leq \ell \leq m$ (but *not* for $\ell > m$, see (9.13)/(9.14) below), and in the Thron case for $0 \leq \ell \leq m-1$:

Theorem 9.12 (Hankel-total positivity for partial m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials).
For each pair of integers $m \geq 1$ and $0 \leq \ell \leq m$, the sequence $\mathbf{S}_{|\ell}^{(m)} = (S_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n \geq 0}$ of partial m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is a Hankel-totally positive sequence in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.

Theorem 9.13 (Hankel-total positivity for partial m -Thron–Rogers polynomials).
For each pair of integers $m \geq 1$ and $0 \leq \ell \leq m-1$, the sequence $\mathbf{T}_{|\ell}^{(m)} = (T_{n|\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{n \geq 0}$ of partial m -Thron–Rogers polynomials is a Hankel-totally positive sequence in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order.

We remark that for the Stieltjes case with $\ell = m$, the recurrence (2.26) [or a simple direct combinatorial argument] implies $S_{n|m}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = S_{n+1}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})/\alpha_m$, so this case of Theorem 9.12 is an immediate consequence of Theorem 9.8. But Theorem 9.12 with $1 \leq \ell \leq m-1$, and Theorem 9.13 with $1 \leq \ell \leq m$, are nontrivial extensions of Theorems 9.8 and 9.9.

We will prove Theorem 9.13 (and hence also Theorem 9.12) in Section 9.4 using the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma.

Let us consider, finally, the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials. Unlike the Stieltjes and Thron cases, these polynomials are *not* Hankel-totally positive coefficientwise in $\boldsymbol{\beta}$, or even when the coefficients $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are given arbitrary nonnegative real values;

indeed, they are not even log-convex. For instance, for the classical Jacobi–Rogers polynomials ($m = 1$) we have (using the notation $\beta_i = \beta_i^{(1)}$ and $\gamma_i = \beta_i^{(0)}$)

$$J_1 J_3 - J_2^2 = \beta_1 \gamma_0 \gamma_1 - \beta_1^2, \quad (9.6)$$

which is negative whenever $\beta_1 > \gamma_0 \gamma_1 \geq 0$. Rather, the Hankel-total positivity of the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials — and also the total positivity of the triangular array of generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials — holds subject to suitable *inequalities* on the coefficients $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ (assumed to take values in some partially ordered commutative ring). Indeed, it follows immediately from Theorems 9.4 and 9.7 that a *sufficient* (though perhaps not necessary) condition for these total positivities to hold is the total positivity of the production matrix $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ defined in (7.4)/(7.5):

Theorem 9.14 (Hankel-total positivity for m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\boldsymbol{\beta} = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ be elements in a partially ordered commutative ring. If the production matrix $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is totally positive of order r , then the sequence $\mathbf{J}^{(m)} = (J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}))_{n \geq 0}$ of m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials is Hankel-totally positive of order r .*

Theorem 9.15 (Total positivity for generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\boldsymbol{\beta} = (\beta_i^{(\ell)})_{0 \leq \ell \leq m, i \geq \ell}$ be elements in a partially ordered commutative ring. If the production matrix $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is totally positive of order r , then the lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{J}^{(m)} = (J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials is also totally positive of order r .*

9.4 Combinatorial proofs using Lindström–Gessel–Viennot

We begin by recalling the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma. The framework is as follows: Let $\Gamma = (V, \vec{E})$ be a directed graph; here the vertex set V and the edge set \vec{E} need not be finite, but we shall assume for notational simplicity that for each ordered pair $(i, j) \in V \times V$ there is at most one edge from i to j . Now let $\mathbf{w} = (w_{ij})_{(i,j) \in \vec{E}}$ be a set of commuting indeterminates associated to the edges of Γ (we refer to them as the *edge weights*). For $i, j \in V$, a *walk* from i to j (of length $n \geq 0$) is a sequence $\gamma = (\gamma_0, \dots, \gamma_n)$ in V such that $\gamma_0 = i$, $\gamma_n = j$, and $(\gamma_{k-1}, \gamma_k) \in \vec{E}$ for $1 \leq k \leq n$. The *weight* of a walk is the product of the weights of its edges:

$$W(\gamma) = \prod_{k=1}^n w_{\gamma_{k-1}\gamma_k}, \quad (9.7)$$

where the empty product is defined as usual to be 1. Note that for each $i, j \in V$, the total weight of walks from i to j , namely

$$b_{ij} = \sum_{\gamma: i \rightarrow j} W(\gamma), \quad (9.8)$$

is a well-defined element of the formal-power-series ring $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{w}]]$, since each monomial in the indeterminates \mathbf{w} corresponds to at most finitely many walks. We therefore define the *walk matrix* $B = (b_{ij})_{i,j \in V}$ with entries in $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{w}]]$.

Now let us consider an $r \times r$ minor of the walk matrix, corresponding to rows $i_1, \dots, i_r \in V$ (the *source vertices*) and columns $j_1, \dots, j_r \in V$ (the *sink vertices*); here i_1, \dots, i_r are all distinct, and j_1, \dots, j_r are all distinct, but the two collections are allowed to overlap. The Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma [72, 98] expresses such a minor as a sum over *vertex-disjoint* systems of walks from the source vertices to the sink vertices, under the condition that the directed graph Γ is *acyclic* (i.e. has no directed cycles):¹³

Lemma 9.16 (Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma). *Suppose that Γ is acyclic. Then*

$$\det B \begin{pmatrix} i_1, \dots, i_r \\ j_1, \dots, j_r \end{pmatrix} = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_r} \operatorname{sgn}(\sigma) \sum_{\substack{\gamma_1: i_1 \rightarrow j_{\sigma(1)} \\ \vdots \\ \gamma_r: i_r \rightarrow j_{\sigma(r)} \\ \gamma_k \cap \gamma_\ell = \emptyset \text{ for } k \neq \ell}} \prod_{i=1}^r W(\gamma_i) \quad (9.9)$$

where the sum runs over all r -tuples of vertex-disjoint walks $\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_r$ connecting the specified vertices; here “vertex-disjoint” means that for $1 \leq k < \ell \leq r$, the walks γ_k and γ_ℓ have no vertices in common (not even the endpoints).

Please note that the right-hand side of (9.9) is a well-defined element of $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{w}]]$, since each monomial corresponds to at most finitely many systems of walks $\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_r$. See e.g. [3, 4, 72] for proofs of the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma.

Now let $\mathbf{i} = (i_1, \dots, i_r)$ be an ordered r -tuple of distinct vertices of Γ , and let $\mathbf{j} = (j_1, \dots, j_r)$ be another such ordered r -tuple; we say that the pair (\mathbf{i}, \mathbf{j}) is **non-permutable** if the set of vertex-disjoint walk systems $\gamma = (\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_r)$ satisfying $\gamma_k: i_k \rightarrow j_{\sigma(k)}$ is empty whenever σ is not the identity permutation. In this situation we avoid the sum over permutations in (9.9); most importantly, we avoid the possibility of terms with $\operatorname{sgn}(\sigma) = -1$. The nonpermutable case arises frequently in applications: for instance, if Γ is planar, then the nonpermutability often follows from topological arguments.

Now let I and J be subsets (not necessarily finite) of V , equipped with total orders $<_I$ and $<_J$, respectively. We say that the pair $((I, <_I), (J, <_J))$ is **fully non-permutable** if for each $r \geq 1$ and each pair of increasing r -tuples $\mathbf{i} = (i_1, \dots, i_r)$ in $(I, <_I)$ and $\mathbf{j} = (j_1, \dots, j_r)$ in $(J, <_J)$, the pair (\mathbf{i}, \mathbf{j}) is nonpermutable. The Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma then has the immediate consequence:

Corollary 9.17 (Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma and total positivity). *Suppose that Γ is acyclic. Let $(I, <_I)$ and $(J, <_J)$ be totally ordered subsets of V such that the pair $((I, <_I), (J, <_J))$ is fully nonpermutable. Then the submatrix B_{IJ} (with rows and columns ordered according to $<_I$ and $<_J$) is totally positive with respect to the coefficientwise order on $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{w}]]$.*

See [23, pp. 179–180] for an example of a nonpermutable pair (\mathbf{i}, \mathbf{j}) that is not fully nonpermutable.

We will use repeatedly the following “topologically obvious” fact:

¹³Lindström [98] inadvertently omitted the key condition that Γ should be acyclic. This condition was made explicit by Gessel and Viennot [72].

Lemma 9.18. *If Γ is embedded in the plane and the vertices of $I \cup J$ lie on the boundary of Γ in the order “first I in reverse order, then J in order”, then the pair (I, J) is fully nonpermutable.*

With these preliminaries in hand, we can now give the promised combinatorial proofs of Theorems 9.8–9.11. In fact, these proofs are very easy, given what we have already developed. We begin with Theorem 9.9 on Hankel minors:

PROOF OF THEOREM 9.9. Form the infinite Hankel matrix corresponding to the sequence $\mathbf{T}^{(m)} = (T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{n \geq 0}$ of m -Thron–Rogers polynomials:

$$H_\infty(\mathbf{T}^{(m)}) = (T_{i+j}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{i, j \geq 0}. \quad (9.10)$$

And consider any $k \times k$ minor of $H_\infty(\mathbf{T}^{(m)})$: that is, we choose sets of integers $I = \{i_1, i_2, \dots, i_k\}$ with $0 \leq i_1 < i_2 < \dots < i_k$ and $J = \{j_1, j_2, \dots, j_k\}$ with $0 \leq j_1 < j_2 < \dots < j_k$, and we consider the $k \times k$ submatrix

$$H_{IJ}(\mathbf{T}^{(m)}) = (T_{i_r+j_s}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}))_{1 \leq r, s \leq k} \quad (9.11)$$

and the corresponding minor

$$\Delta_{IJ}(\mathbf{T}^{(m)}) = \det H_{IJ}(\mathbf{T}^{(m)}). \quad (9.12)$$

We can write the elements of the submatrix $H_{IJ}(\mathbf{T}^{(m)})$ as sums over walks in the directed graph $\tilde{G}_m = (V_m, \tilde{E}_m)$ with vertex set (2.29) and edge set (2.40): it is easy to see that $T_{i_r+j_s}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is the sum over walks from $(-(m+1)i_r, 0)$ to $((m+1)j_s, 0)$, with a weight 1 on each rising directed edge, weight α_i on each m -falling directed edge starting at height i , and weight δ_{i+1} on each m -long directed edge starting at height i . It is also easy to see that \tilde{G}_m is planar and acyclic. Finally — and most importantly — the totally ordered subsets of vertices $I^* = \{(0, 0) = i_0^* < (-(m+1), 0) = i_1^* < (-2(m+1), 0) = i_2^* < \dots\}$ and $J^* = \{(0, 0) = j_0^* < (m+1, 0) = j_1^* < (2(m+1), 0) = j_2^* < \dots\}$ form a fully nonpermutable pair: this follows from Lemma 9.18 because the sets I^* and J^* lie on the boundary of \tilde{G}_m and are appropriately ordered (see Figure 8 for an example with $m = 2$).

Applying the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma, we immediately obtain:

Proposition 9.19. *The minor $\Delta_{IJ}(\mathbf{T}^{(m)})$ is the generating polynomial for families of vertex-disjoint m -Schröder paths P_1, \dots, P_k where path P_r starts at $(-(m+1)i_r, 0)$ and ends at $((m+1)j_r, 0)$, in which each rise gets weight 1, each m -fall from height i gets weight α_i , and each m -long step from height i gets weight δ_{i+1} .*

And since every such minor is manifestly a polynomial in $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}$ with nonnegative integer coefficients, we have proven Theorem 9.9. \square

Remark. For Dyck paths (with $m = 1$), the analogue of Proposition 9.19 was found already a quarter-century ago by Viennot [157, pp. IV-13–IV-15]. He could

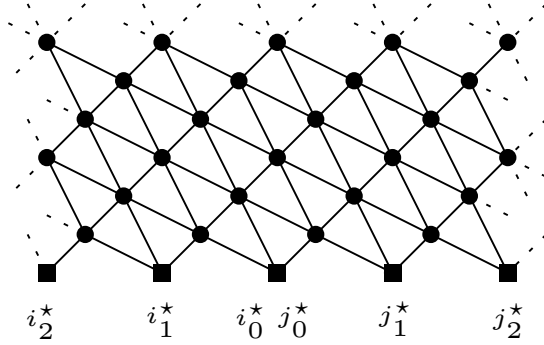


Figure 8. The subsets I^* and J^* for $m = 2$. Vertices of $I^* \cup J^*$ are indicated by squares.

easily have deduced from it the Hankel-total positivity of the classical Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, had he thought to pose that question. ■

We next prove Theorem 9.11 on the minors of the lower-triangular matrix:

PROOF OF THEOREM 9.11. The proof follows closely that of Theorem 9.9; the only difference is that the sink vertices are now $J^{**} = \{(0, 0) = j_0^{**} < (0, m + 1) = j_1^{**} < (0, 2(m + 1)) = j_2^{**} < \dots\}$, so that the matrix element $T_{i_r, j_s}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ is the sum over walks from $(-(m + 1)i_r, 0)$ to $(0, (m + 1)j_s)$. Now any path from any i_r^* to any j_s^{**} in the graph \tilde{G}_m must actually lie in $\tilde{G}_m \cap (-\mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N})$. And by Lemma 9.18 the pair (I^*, J^{**}) is fully nonpermutable, because I^* and J^{**} lie on the boundary of $\tilde{G}_m \cap (-\mathbb{N} \times \mathbb{N})$ and are appropriately ordered (see Figure 9).

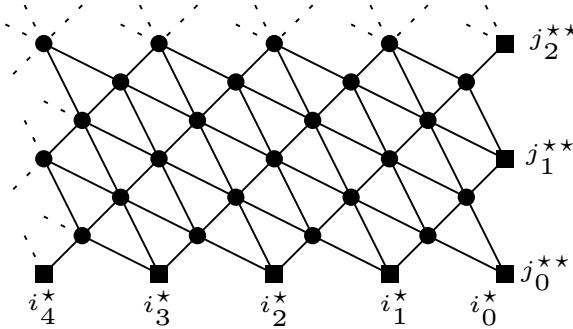


Figure 9. The subsets I^* and J^{**} for $m = 2$.

This proves Theorem 9.11. □

Let us now prove Theorems 9.12 and 9.13, which extend Theorems 9.8 and 9.9 to the polynomials generated by products $f_0 f_1 \cdots f_\ell$ with $0 \leq \ell \leq m$ (Stieltjes) and $0 \leq \ell \leq m - 1$ (Thron). We begin with the Stieltjes case:

PROOF OF THEOREM 9.12. The source vertices are as before, while the sink vertices are now $J^{*\ell} = \{(0, 0) < (m + 1 + \ell, \ell) < (2(m + 1) + \ell, \ell) < \dots\}$. When $\ell \leq m$, the

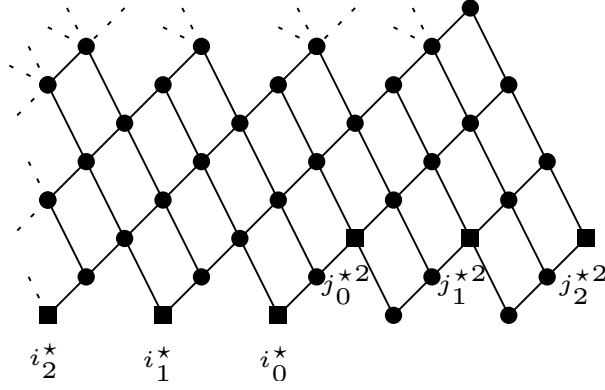


Figure 10. The subsets I^* and J^{ℓ} for $m = 2$ and $\ell = 2$.

sink vertices J^{ℓ} lie on the boundary of the graph G_m , so the pair (I^*, J^{ℓ}) is fully nonpermutable by Lemma 9.18. See Figure 10.

□

Please note that the pair (I^*, J^{ℓ}) is *not* fully nonpermutable if $\ell > m$: the sink vertices no longer lie on the boundary of the graph, and there *does* exist a vertex-disjoint pair of walks $i_0^* \rightarrow j_1^{\ell}$ and $i_1^* \rightarrow j_0^{\ell}$. See Figure 11 for an example in the case $(m, \ell) = (2, 3)$, which generalizes naturally to all cases of $1 \leq m < \ell$.

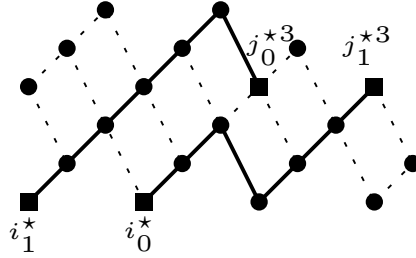


Figure 11. A pair of nonintersecting paths from i_0 to j_1^{*3} and from i_1 to j_0^{*3} in the case of $m = 2$ and $\ell = 3$, showing that the pair (I^*, J^{*3}) is not fully nonpermutable.

Indeed, for $\ell > m$ the conclusion of Theorem 9.12 is *false*: we have

$$S_{0|\ell}^{(m)} = 1 \tag{9.13a}$$

$$S_{1|\ell}^{(m)} = \sum_{i=m}^{m+\ell} \alpha_i \tag{9.13b}$$

$$S_{2|\ell}^{(m)} = \sum_{i=m}^{2m+\ell} \sum_{j=\max(i-m, m)}^{m+\ell} \alpha_i \alpha_j \tag{9.13c}$$

and hence for $\ell > m$

$$S_{0|\ell}^{(m)} S_{2|\ell}^{(m)} - (S_{1|\ell}^{(m)})^2 = - \sum_{i=2m+1}^{m+\ell} \sum_{j=m}^{i-m-1} \alpha_i \alpha_j + \sum_{i=m+\ell+1}^{2m+\ell} \sum_{j=i-m}^{m+\ell} \alpha_i \alpha_j, \tag{9.14}$$

which is $\neq 0$ since the coefficient of $\alpha_m \alpha_{2m+1}$ is -1 .

PROOF OF THEOREM 9.13. The argument is the same as that for Theorem 9.12, except that in the Thron case we need $\ell \leq m - 1$ for the sink vertices $J^{\star\ell}$ to lie on the boundary of the graph \tilde{G}_m , because of the extra edges $(2, -(m - 1))$ for the m -long steps. See Figure 12.

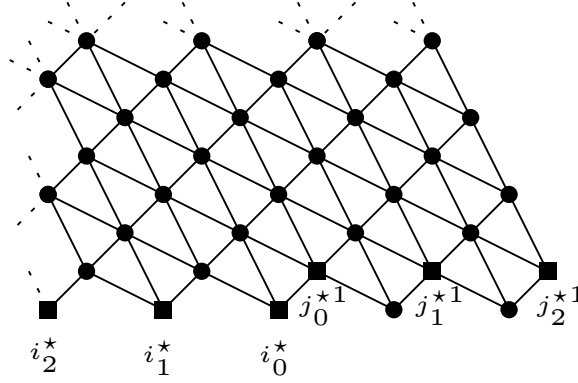


Figure 12. The subsets I^{\star} and $J^{\star\ell}$ for $m = 2$ and $\ell = 1$.

□

Once again, the pair $(I^{\star}, J^{\star\ell})$ fails to be fully nonpermutable if $\ell > m - 1$: see Figure 13 for an example in the case $(m, \ell) = (2, 2)$, which generalizes naturally to all cases of $1 \leq m \leq \ell$.

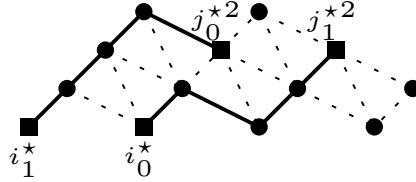


Figure 13. A pair of nonintersecting paths from i_0 to $j_1^{\star 2}$ and from i_1 to $j_0^{\star 2}$ in the case of $m = 2$ and $\ell = 2$, showing that the pair $(I^{\star}, J^{\star 2})$ is not fully nonpermutable.

9.5 Algebraic proofs using production matrices

The algebraic proofs of Theorems 9.8 and 9.10 concerning the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials are now easy. By Proposition 8.2(b), the production matrix for the generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is the matrix $P^{(m)S}(\alpha)$ defined by (7.6); and by Lemma 9.1, this matrix is totally positive in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\alpha]$ equipped with the coefficientwise partial order. Then Theorem 9.4 implies that the lower-triangular matrix of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is coefficientwise totally positive (Theorem 9.10), while Theorem 9.7 implies that the sequence of m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive (Theorem 9.8).

As for Theorems 9.9 and 9.11 concerning the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials, we can handle by algebraic methods the restricted case defined in Section 7.1 in which we impose $\delta_i = 0$ whenever i is a multiple of $m + 1$. By Proposition 8.2(c), the production matrix for the restricted generalized m -Thron–Rogers polynomials is the matrix $P^{(m)\text{RT}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}')$ defined in Proposition 7.4. Since we have only a combinatorial definition of this matrix, not an algebraic one, we will have to prove its total positivity combinatorially:

Lemma 9.20. *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$. Then the matrix $P^{(m)\text{RT}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta}')$ defined in Proposition 7.4 is totally positive, coefficientwise in $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and $\boldsymbol{\delta}'$.*

PROOF. We apply the Lindström–Gessel–Viennot lemma to the graph $\tilde{G}_m \cap ([0, m + 1] \times \mathbb{N})$ with $I^{***} = \{(0, 0) = i_0^{***} < (0, m + 1) = i_1^{***} < (0, 2(m + 1)) = i_2^{***} < \dots\}$ and $J^{***} = \{(m + 1, 0) = j_0^{***} < (m + 1, m + 1) = j_1^{***} < (m + 1, 2(m + 1)) = j_2^{***} < \dots\}$. By Lemma 9.18 the pair (I^{***}, J^{***}) is fully nonpermutable, because I^{***} and J^{***} lie on the boundary of $\tilde{G}_m \cap ([0, m + 1] \times \mathbb{N})$ and are appropriately ordered (see Figure 14).

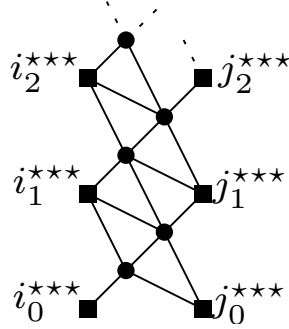


Figure 14. The subsets I^{***} and J^{***} for $m = 2$.

□

With this lemma in hand, the desired results then follow from Theorems 9.4 and 9.7 just as in the Stieltjes case.

10 Weights periodic of period $m + 1$ or m

Consider the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ when the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ are taken to be periodic of period $p \geq 1$:

$$\alpha_{m+j+pk} = x_j \tag{10.1}$$

where $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{p-1})$ will be treated as indeterminates. Let $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x})$ be the polynomials obtained by specializing $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ to these weights. In this section we will obtain explicit formulae for the polynomials $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x})$ when the period p is either $m + 1$ or m . The results will be *multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials* [69, 96], which reduce to the ordinary Narayana polynomials when $m = 1$ and to the Fuss–Catalan numbers when $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$. Furthermore, after obtaining these formulae it will be

natural to pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$; then everything will be expressed in terms of the *Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions* [148], which contain as specializations the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials for all m .

We will perform this computation in two ways: first, by solving the recurrences (2.26) and (2.27) using Lagrange inversion (Sections 10.1 and 10.2); and second, by working with the production matrices (Sections 10.4 and 10.5). The second method is more complicated but provides additional insight, and also allows the computation of the generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ and their row-generating polynomials. However, at present we are able to carry out the production-matrix calculation only for period $m + 1$, not for period m .

Along the way (Section 10.3) we will also give combinatorial interpretations for our multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials and Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions in terms of ordered trees (of various types), noncrossing partitions, and parking functions.

We will use Lagrange inversion in the following form [69]: If $\phi(u)$ is a formal power series with coefficients in a commutative ring R containing the rationals, then there exists a unique formal power series $f(t)$ with zero constant term satisfying

$$f(t) = t\phi(f(t)) , \quad (10.2)$$

and it is given by

$$[t^n] f(t) = \frac{1}{n} [u^{n-1}] \phi(u)^n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 ; \quad (10.3)$$

and more generally, if $H(u)$ is any formal power series, then

$$[t^n] H(f(t)) = \frac{1}{n} [u^{n-1}] H'(u) \phi(u)^n \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 . \quad (10.4)$$

10.1 Period $m + 1$: Solving the recurrence

Let $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ be given by (10.1) with period $p = m + 1$, or in other words $\alpha_i = x_{i+1 \bmod m+1}$ with $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_m)$; this means that we get a weight x_i for each m -fall to a height equal to $i \bmod m + 1$. We write $P_n^{(m)}$ as a shorthand for $P_n^{(m, m+1)}$. We use the recurrence (2.26). The periodicity of the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ implies the periodicity of the f_k ; therefore the product $f_k \cdots f_{k+m}$ is independent of k , let us call it F . Multiplying (2.26) for $0 \leq k \leq m$ leads to the functional equation

$$F = \prod_{i=0}^m (1 + x_i t F) . \quad (10.5)$$

Equivalently, defining $f = tF$, the functional equation is

$$f = t \prod_{i=0}^m (1 + x_i f) . \quad (10.6)$$

Let us write the solution of (10.5) as

$$F(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) t^n \quad (10.7)$$

and more generally

$$F(t)^{k+1} = \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) t^{n-k} \quad \text{for integers } k \geq 0. \quad (10.8)$$

Solving (10.6) for f by Lagrange inversion gives [69, eq. (3.4.3)]

$$Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = [t^{n-k}] F(t)^{k+1} = [t^{n+1}] f(t)^{k+1} = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_0, \dots, j_m \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n-k}} \prod_{i=0}^m \binom{n+1}{j_i} x_i^{j_i}. \quad (10.9)$$

Here $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree $n-k$, which is symmetric in x_0, \dots, x_m . When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, Chu–Vandermonde gives $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{1}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{(m+1)(n+1)}{n-k}$; in particular, $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{1})$ equals the Fuss–Catalan number $C_{n+1}^{(m+1)}$.

Inserting (10.7)/(10.9) into (2.26) gives

$$f_0(t) = 1 + x_0 t F(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) t^n \quad (10.10)$$

where $P_0^{(m)} = 1$ and

$$P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = x_0 Q_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.11a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_0, \dots, j_m \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n}} \binom{n}{j_0-1} x_0^{j_0} \prod_{i=1}^m \binom{n}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.11b)$$

for $n \geq 1$. Here $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n : it is symmetric in x_1, \dots, x_m , but x_0 plays a distinguished role; however, this distinguished role amounts only to a prefactor x_0 for $n \geq 1$, and the remaining polynomial $Q_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is symmetric in x_0, \dots, x_m . The invariance of $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ under permutations of x_1, \dots, x_m illustrates once again the nonuniqueness of m -S-fractions with $m \geq 2$. When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, $P_n^{(m)}$ equals the Fuss–Catalan number $C_n^{(m+1)}$. Since

$$Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = P_{n+1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})/x_0, \quad (10.12)$$

the sequence $(Q_n^{(m)})_{n \geq 0}$ is, up to a factor x_0 , a subsequence of $(P_n^{(m)})_{n \geq 0}$.

When $m = 1$ these polynomials reduce to the homogenized Narayana polynomials

$$P_n^{(1)}(x, y) = \sum_{j=0}^n N(n, j) x^j y^{n-j} \quad (10.13)$$

$$Q_n^{(1)}(x, y) = \sum_{j=0}^n N(n+1, j+1) x^j y^{n-j} \quad (10.14)$$

where the Narayana numbers [110, A001263] are defined by $N(0, j) = \delta_{j0}$ and¹⁴

$$N(n, j) = \frac{1}{n} \binom{n}{j-1} \binom{n}{j} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1. \quad (10.15)$$

We therefore call $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$, $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ the ***multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials*** [69, 96].

Since the weights (10.1) are manifestly nonnegative with respect to the coefficientwise order on $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{x}]$, the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity of the $P_n^{(m)}$ is an immediate consequence of Theorem 9.8. As for $Q_n^{(m)}$, its Hankel-total positivity can either be deduced from that of $P_n^{(m)}$ by using (10.12), or else obtained directly as a consequence of Theorem 9.12 with $\ell = m$. We conclude:

Theorem 10.1 (Hankel-total positivity of multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials). *For each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequences $(P_n^{(m)})_{n \geq 0}$ and $(Q_n^{(m)})_{n \geq 0}$ are coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m .*

Note now that whenever $m < m'$ we have $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(x_0, \dots, x_m) = Q_{n,k}^{(m')}(x_0, \dots, x_m, 0, \dots, 0)$ and $P_n^{(m)}(x_0, \dots, x_m) = P_n^{(m')}(x_0, \dots, x_m, 0, \dots, 0)$: this follows immediately either from the explicit formulae (10.9)/(10.11) or from the branched continued fraction using Proposition 3.1. We can therefore pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$ and define

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_0, j_1, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n-k}} \prod_{i=0}^{\infty} \binom{n+1}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.16)$$

$$P_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = x_0 Q_{n-1}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.17a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_0, j_1, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n}} \binom{n}{j_0-1} x_0^{j_0} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \binom{n}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.17b)$$

where $\mathbf{x} = (x_i)_{i \geq 0}$ is an infinite set of indeterminates. Then $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}$ and $P_n^{(m)}$ can be obtained from $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ and $P_n^{(\infty)}$ by specializing $x_i = 0$ for $i > m$. Since the sums (10.16)/(10.17) have infinitely many terms, they have to be interpreted as formal power series (rather than polynomials) in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} . In fact, $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ belongs to the ring of symmetric functions in \mathbf{x} , while $P_n^{(\infty)}$ is a symmetric function of \mathbf{x} up

¹⁴**Warning:** Many authors (e.g. [117]) define the Narayana numbers to be the reversal of ours, i.e.

$$N^{\text{theirs}}(n, j) = N(n, n-j) = \frac{1}{n} \binom{n}{j+1} \binom{n}{j} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1.$$

For $n \geq 1$, our Narayana numbers are nonvanishing for $1 \leq j \leq n$, while in the other convention they are nonvanishing for $0 \leq j \leq n-1$.

to a prefactor x_0 .¹⁵ Moreover, the functional equation (10.5) with $m = \infty$ can be rewritten in the language of symmetric functions as

$$F(t) = E(tF(t)) \quad (10.18)$$

where

$$E(t) = \prod_{i=0}^{\infty} (1 + x_i t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} e_n(\mathbf{x}) t^n \quad (10.19)$$

is the generating function for the elementary symmetric functions. Then Lagrange inversion gives

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = [t^{n-k}] F(t)^{k+1} = \frac{k+1}{n+1} [t^{n-k}] E(t)^{n+1} \quad (10.20a)$$

$$= \sum_{\substack{r_1, r_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i r_i = n-k}} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{n+1}{n+1 - \sum r_i, r_1, r_2, \dots} \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} e_j(\mathbf{x})^{r_j} \quad (10.20b)$$

$$= \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{n+1}{n+1 - \ell(\lambda), m_1(\lambda), m_2(\lambda), \dots} e_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}), \quad (10.20c)$$

where the second sum runs over partitions λ of the integer $n-k$; here $\ell(\lambda)$ denotes the number of parts of λ , and $m_i(\lambda)$ ($= r_i$) denotes the number of parts of λ equal to i . Alternatively, we can use the generating function for the complete homogeneous symmetric functions,

$$H(t) = \prod_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{1 - x_i t} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} h_n(\mathbf{x}) t^n = \frac{1}{E(-t)}, \quad (10.21)$$

to write

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} [t^{n-k}] H(-t)^{-(n+1)} \quad (10.22a)$$

$$= \sum_{\substack{r_1, r_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i r_i = n-k}} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{-(n+1)}{-(n+1 + \sum r_i), r_1, r_2, \dots} \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} [(-1)^j h_j(\mathbf{x})]^{r_j} \quad (10.22b)$$

$$= \sum_{\substack{r_1, r_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i r_i = n-k}} \frac{k+1}{n+1} (-1)^{n - \sum r_i} \binom{n + \sum r_i}{n, r_1, r_2, \dots} \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} h_j(\mathbf{x})^{r_j} \quad (10.22c)$$

$$= \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \frac{k+1}{n+1} (-1)^{n - \ell(\lambda)} \binom{n + \ell(\lambda)}{n, m_1(\lambda), m_2(\lambda), \dots} h_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}). \quad (10.22d)$$

¹⁵Our notation for symmetric functions follows Macdonald [105, Chapter 1] and Stanley [149, Chapter 7].

Also, the definition (10.16) can trivially be rewritten in terms of the monomial symmetric functions m_λ as

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \left[\prod_i \binom{n+1}{\lambda_i} \right] m_\lambda(\mathbf{x}). \quad (10.23)$$

We call $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ the **Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions**. For $k = 0$ they appeared two decades ago, in a different guise, in the work of Stanley [148] on parking-function symmetric functions: see Section 10.3.4 below. Stanley also gave (in dual form) the expansions of $Q_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ in terms of the power-sum symmetric functions p_λ and the Schur functions s_λ [148, eqns. (2) and (3)].

Since the coefficientwise nonnegativity of Hankel minors passes trivially to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$, Theorem 10.1 immediately implies:

Theorem 10.2 (Hankel-total positivity of ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series).

The sequences $(P_n^{(\infty)})_{n \geq 0}$ and $(Q_n^{(\infty)})_{n \geq 0}$ are Hankel-totally positive with respect to the coefficientwise order on the formal-power-series ring $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{x}]]$.

Return now to the case of finite m , and suppose that the multiset $\{x_0, \dots, x_m\}$ consists of elements $\mathbf{y} = (y_1, \dots, y_l)$ with multiplicities $\mathbf{p} = (p_1, \dots, p_l)$ (where of course $\sum p_i = m + 1$). Then the functional equation (10.5) becomes

$$F = \prod_{i=1}^l (1 + y_i t F)^{p_i}, \quad (10.24)$$

and solving it by Lagrange inversion gives [69, eq. (3.4.3)]

$$F(t)^{k+1} = \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} \tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) t^{n-k} \quad (10.25)$$

where

$$\tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_1, \dots, j_l \geq 0 \\ j_1 + \dots + j_l = n-k}} \prod_{i=1}^l \binom{p_i(n+1)}{j_i} y_i^{j_i}. \quad (10.26)$$

Then, if we make the convention that $x_0 = y_1$, we have

$$f_0(t) = 1 + y_1 t F(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \tilde{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) t^n \quad (10.27)$$

where $\tilde{P}_0^{(m)} = 1$ and

$$\tilde{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) = y_1 \tilde{Q}_{n-1,0}^{(m)}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) \quad (10.28a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_1, \dots, j_l \geq 0 \\ j_1 + \dots + j_l = n}} \binom{p_1 n}{j_1 - 1} y_1^{j_1} \prod_{i=2}^l \binom{p_i n}{j_i} y_i^{j_i} \quad (10.28b)$$

for $n \geq 1$.

Example 10.3 (Interpolating between p -Fuss–Catalan and p' -Fuss–Catalan). Let $m' \geq 1$ and $0 \leq m \leq m'$, and set $p = m + 1$, $p' = m' + 1$. Let us consider an m' -branched continued fraction with $x_0, \dots, x_m = x$ and $x_{m+1}, \dots, x_{m'} = y$, hence $y_1 = x$, $y_2 = y$, $p_1 = p$, $p_2 = p' - p$. Then (10.28b) becomes

$$\tilde{P}_n^{(p,p')}(x, y) = \sum_{k=0}^n T_{n,j}^{(p,p')} x^k y^{n-j} \quad (10.29)$$

where $T_{0,j}^{(p,p')} = \delta_{j0}$ and

$$T_{n,j}^{(p,p')} = \frac{1}{n} \binom{pn}{j-1} \binom{(p'-p)n}{n-j} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (10.30)$$

are generalized Narayana numbers. For $(p, p') = (1, 2)$ they reduce to the Narayana numbers (10.15); for $(p, p') = (1, 3)$ they are [110, A120986]; for $(p, p') = (2, 3), (3, 4), (4, 5)$ they are [110, A108767, A173020, A173621]. Please note that the triangular array $T^{(p,p')}$ has the p -Fuss–Catalan numbers on the diagonal ($j = n$) and the p' -Fuss–Catalan numbers as the row sums; moreover, if $p = p'$ we have $T_{n,j}^{(p,p')} = C_n^{(p)} \delta_{nj}$. These facts are easily derived either from (10.30) or from the branched continued fraction (using Proposition 3.1 to handle $y = 0$). It follows from Theorem 10.1 that for each pair $1 \leq p \leq p'$, the sequence of polynomials $(\tilde{P}_n^{(p,p')}(x, y))_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive.

Alternatively, we can make the substitution $x = 1 + z$, $y = z$: simple algebra then yields

$$\tilde{P}_n^{(p,p')\star}(z) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \tilde{P}_n^{(p,p')}(1+z, z) = \sum_{j=0}^n T_{n,j}^{(p,p')\star} z^j \quad (10.31)$$

where $T_{0,j}^{(p,p')\star} = \delta_{j0}$ and

$$T_{n,j}^{(p,p')\star} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=0}^j \binom{pn}{n-i-1} \binom{(p'-p)n}{i} \binom{n-i}{n-j} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1. \quad (10.32)$$

The triangular array $T^{(p,p')\star}$ has the p -Fuss–Catalan numbers in the first ($j = 0$) column and the p' -Fuss–Catalan numbers on the diagonal; moreover, if $p = p'$ we have $T_{n,j}^{(p,p')} = C_n^{(p)} \binom{n}{j}$. These formulae are easily derived either from (10.32) or from the branched continued fraction. Also, when $p' = p + 1$, it is not hard to show from (10.32) that

$$T_{n,j}^{(p,p+1)\star} = \frac{1}{(p-1)n+j+1} \binom{pn+j}{n} \binom{n}{j}. \quad (10.33)$$

For $(p, p') = (1, 2)$ this is [110, A088617/A060693]; for $(p, p') = (2, 3)$ it is [110, A104978]. Writing $j = n - \ell$ in (10.33), we see that it is equivalent to (2.35); therefore, the $(m+1)$ -branched S-fraction of period $m+2$ with $x_0, \dots, x_m = 1+z$ and $x_{m+1} = z$ is also equivalent to an $(m+1)$ -branched T-fraction with $\alpha_i = z$ and $\delta_i = 1$ for all i . For $m = 0$ this is a well-known fact about Narayana polynomials. ■

10.2 Period m : Solving the recurrence

Now let α be given by (10.1) with period $p = m$, or in other words $\alpha_i = x_{i \bmod m}$ with $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$; this means that we get a weight x_i for each m -fall to a height equal to $i \bmod m$. We write $P_n^{(m)-}$ as a shorthand for $P_n^{(m,m)}$. This time we use the recurrence (2.27). The periodicity of the α implies the periodicity of the f_k ; therefore the product $f_{k+1} \cdots f_{k+m}$ is independent of k , let us call it G . Multiplying (2.27) for $0 \leq k \leq m-1$ leads to the functional equation

$$G = \prod_{i=0}^{m-1} (1 - x_i t G)^{-1}, \quad (10.34)$$

or equivalently, defining $g = tG$,

$$g = t \prod_{i=0}^{m-1} (1 - x_i g)^{-1}. \quad (10.35)$$

Writing

$$G(t)^{k+1} = \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) t^{n-k} \quad (10.36)$$

(with $Q_n^{(m)-} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} Q_{n,0}^{(m)-}$) and solving (10.35) by Lagrange inversion gives [69, eq. (3.4.5)] where

$$Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_0, \dots, j_{m-1} \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n-k}} \prod_{i=0}^{m-1} \binom{n+j_i}{j_i} x_i^{j_i}. \quad (10.37)$$

When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$ we can use $\binom{n+j}{j} = (-1)^j \binom{-n-1}{j}$ together with Chu–Vandermonde to obtain $Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{1}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{(m+1)(n+1) - k - 2}{n-k}$.

A further application of Lagrange inversion yields after some algebra

$$f_0(t) = \frac{1}{1 - x_0 t G(t)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) t^n \quad (10.38)$$

where $P_0^{(m)-} = 1$ and

$$P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_0, \dots, j_{m-1} \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n}} \binom{n+j_0}{j_0-1} x_0^{j_0} \prod_{i=1}^{m-1} \binom{n+j_i-1}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.39)$$

for $n \geq 1$. When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$ this equals $C_n^{(m+1)}$. A combinatorial proof of (10.39) was given by Młotkowski [107, Theorem 1.3]. We call $P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$, $Q_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ the ***multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type***. Please note that, in contrast to (10.11a), the relation between $P_n^{(m)-}$ and $Q_n^{(m)-}$ is not trivial.

When $m = 1$, we have $Q_n^{(1)-}(x_0) = P_n^{(1)-}(x_0) = C_n x_0^n$. When $m = 2$, we have

$$Q_n^{(2)-}(x_0, x_1) = \frac{1}{n+1} \sum_{j=0}^n \binom{n+j}{j} \binom{2n-j}{n-j} x_0^j x_1^{n-j} \quad (10.40)$$

$$P_n^{(2)-}(x_0, x_1) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=0}^n \binom{n+j}{j-1} \binom{2n-j-1}{n-j} x_0^j x_1^{n-j} \quad (10.41)$$

To our surprise, these coefficient arrays are not currently in [110].

Once again we have coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity: for $P_n^{(m)-}$ this follows from Theorem 9.8, while for $Q_n^{(m)-}$ it follows from Theorem 9.12 with $\ell = m - 1$. We conclude:

Theorem 10.4 (Hankel-total positivity of multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type). *For each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequences $(P_n^{(m)-})_{n \geq 0}$ and $(Q_n^{(m)-})_{n \geq 0}$ are coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} .*

Once again we can pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$ and define the formal power series

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_0, j_1, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n-k}} \prod_{i=0}^{\infty} \binom{n+j_i}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.42)$$

$$P_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_0, j_1, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum j_i = n}} \binom{n+j_0}{j_0-1} x_0^{j_0} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \binom{n+j_i-1}{j_i} x_i^{j_i} \quad (10.43)$$

(and of course $Q_n^{(\infty)-} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} Q_{n,0}^{(\infty)-}$) where $\mathbf{x} = (x_i)_{i \geq 0}$. Here $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}$ is a symmetric function in \mathbf{x} , while $P_n^{(\infty)-}$ is a power series in x_0 whose coefficients are symmetric functions of x_1, x_2, \dots . The functional equation (10.34) with $m = \infty$ can be rewritten as

$$G(t) = H(tG(t)) \quad (10.44)$$

where $H(t)$ is the generating function (10.21) for the complete homogeneous symmetric functions. Then Lagrange inversion gives the dual of (10.20) and (10.22):

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = [t^{n-k}] G(t)^{k+1} = \frac{k+1}{n+1} [t^{n-k}] H(t)^{n+1} = \frac{k+1}{n+1} [t^{n-k}] E(-t)^{-(n+1)} \quad (10.45a)$$

$$= \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{n+1}{n+1-\ell(\lambda), m_1(\lambda), m_2(\lambda), \dots} h_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.45b)$$

$$= \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \frac{k+1}{n+1} (-1)^{n-\ell(\lambda)} \binom{n+\ell(\lambda)}{n, m_1(\lambda), m_2(\lambda), \dots} e_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}). \quad (10.45c)$$

That is, $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-} = \omega Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ where ω is the involution of the ring of symmetric functions defined by $\omega h_n = e_n$. Also, the definition (10.42) can trivially be rewritten as

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} \left[\prod_i \binom{n+\lambda_i}{n} \right] m_\lambda(\mathbf{x}). \quad (10.46)$$

We call $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ the **Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions of negative type**.

A further application of Lagrange inversion gives for $n \geq 1$

$$P_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = [t^n] (1 - x_0 t G(t))^{-1} = \frac{1}{n} [t^{n-1}] \frac{x_0}{(1 - x_0 t)^2} H(t)^n \quad (10.47a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^n j x_0^j [t^{n-j}] H(t)^n \quad (10.47b)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^n j x_0^j \sum_{\substack{r_1, r_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i r_i = n-j}} \binom{n}{n - \sum r_i, r_1, r_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} h_i(\mathbf{x})^{r_i} \quad (10.47c)$$

$$= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=1}^n j x_0^j \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-j} \binom{n}{n - \ell(\lambda), m_1(\lambda), m_2(\lambda), \dots} h_\lambda(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.47d)$$

as well as a similar formula in terms of e_λ .

Finally, we can again conclude:

Theorem 10.5 (Hankel-total positivity of ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type). *The sequences $(P_n^{(\infty)-})_{n \geq 0}$ and $(Q_n^{(\infty)-})_{n \geq 0}$ are Hankel-totally positive with respect to the coefficientwise order on the formal-power-series ring $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{x}]]$.*

Return now to the case of finite m , and suppose that the multiset $\{x_0, \dots, x_{m-1}\}$ consists of elements $\mathbf{y} = (y_1, \dots, y_l)$ with multiplicities $\mathbf{p} = (p_1, \dots, p_l)$ (where of course $\sum p_i = m$). Then the functional equation (10.34) becomes

$$G = \prod_{i=1}^l (1 - y_i t G)^{-p_i}, \quad (10.48)$$

and solving it by Lagrange inversion gives [69, eq. (3.4.5)]

$$G(t)^{k+1} = \sum_{n=k}^{\infty} \tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) t^{n-k} \quad (10.49)$$

where

$$\tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) = \frac{k+1}{n+1} \sum_{\substack{j_1, \dots, j_l \geq 0 \\ j_1 + \dots + j_l = n-k}} \prod_{i=1}^l \binom{p_i(n+1) + j_i - 1}{j_i} y_i^{j_i}. \quad (10.50)$$

If we make the convention that $x_0 = y_1$, then a further application of Lagrange inversion gives

$$f_0(t) = \frac{1}{1 - y_1 t G(t)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \tilde{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) t^n \quad (10.51)$$

where $\tilde{P}_0^{(m)-} = 1$ and

$$\tilde{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{y}; \mathbf{p}) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\substack{j_1, \dots, j_l \geq 0 \\ j_1 + \dots + j_l = n}} \binom{p_1 n + j_1}{j_1 - 1} y_1^{j_1} \prod_{i=2}^l \binom{p_i n + j_i - 1}{j_i} y_i^{j_i} \quad (10.52a)$$

for $n \geq 1$.

10.3 Combinatorial interpretations of the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials

It is an immediate consequence of the definitions that $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)n$ in which each m -fall to a height $i \bmod m+1$ gets weight x_i . Moreover, (10.12) then implies that $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)(n+1)$ in which each m -fall to a height $i \bmod m+1$ gets weight x_i , *except for* the last step (an m -fall to height 0) which gets weight 1 rather than x_0 . Or equivalently, from (10.7) and the definition of F we can see that $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for partial m -Dyck paths from $(0,0)$ to $((m+1)n+m, m)$, with the usual weights. Similar interpretations apply to the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type, $P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $Q_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$.

In this subsection we would like to present some other, less trivial, combinatorial interpretations of the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials, in terms of ordered trees (of various types), noncrossing partitions, and parking functions.

10.3.1 Fuss–Narayana polynomials of positive type: $(m+1)$ -ary trees

Let us recall [147, p. 295] the recursive definition of an r -ary tree ($r \geq 1$): it is either empty or else consists of a root together with an ordered list of r subtrees, each of which is an r -ary tree (which may be empty). We draw an edge from each vertex to the root of each of its nonempty subtrees; an edge from a vertex to the root of its i th subtree (let us number them $0 \leq i \leq r-1$) will be called an i -edge (see Figure 15 for an example).

Let f be the ordinary generating function for nonempty r -ary trees in which each vertex gets a weight t and each i -edge gets a weight x_i . The recursive definition leads immediately to the functional equation

$$f = t \prod_{i=0}^{r-1} (1 + x_i f), \quad (10.53)$$

which is precisely (10.6). Hence:

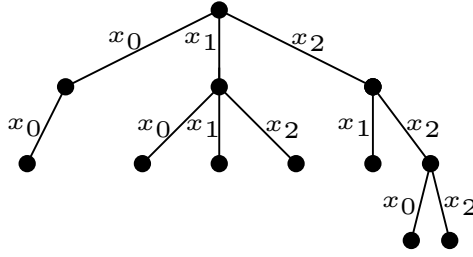


Figure 15. A 3-ary tree, with the edge weights shown.

Proposition 10.6. *The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.9) is the generating polynomial for $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

More generally, the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for ordered forests of $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on $n + 1$ total vertices with $k + 1$ components (hence $n - k$ edges) in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .

This result (for trees) is due to Cigler [32, Theorem 1], who gave a combinatorial proof.

Since $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = x_0 Q_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$, we also have:

Proposition 10.7. *For $n \geq 1$, the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.11) is x_0 times the generating polynomial for $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on n vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Equivalently, $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which the edge (if any) emanating from the root is a 0-edge and in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

This result also has a direct combinatorial proof. There is a bijection φ between $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on n unlabeled vertices and m -Dyck paths of length $(m + 1)n$, which can be defined recursively as follows¹⁶: The empty tree \emptyset maps onto the zero-step path; if the tree T consists of a root r and subtrees T_0, \dots, T_m , then $\varphi(T) = \varphi(T_0)U\varphi(T_1)U \cdots \varphi(T_{m-1})U\varphi(T_m)D$ where U is a rise and D is an m -fall. Let us now say that the height $h(v)$ of a vertex $v \in T$ is the sum of the indices i ($0 \leq i \leq m$) on the edges connecting it to the root. Then, corresponding to each vertex $v \in T$, the path $\varphi(T)$ contains rises starting at heights $h(v), h(v) + 1, \dots, h(v) + m - 1$ and an m -fall starting at height $h(v) + m$. Therefore, under (10.1) with $p = m + 1$, the m -Dyck path will get a weight $\prod_{v \in T} x_{h(v)}$. This is the right weight for the root (x_0) and for the children of the root (x_i for child i) but not for the remaining vertices. However, the correct weights can be arranged by a simple bijection that “twists” the tree: for child i of the root, we permute its subtrees cyclically by i ; we then do the same thing successively at lower levels of the tree. After this bijection, the weights will be x_0 for the root and x_i for each vertex that is child i of its parent, as asserted in Proposition 10.7.

We can also pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$. Let us define recursively an ∞ -ary tree: it is either empty or else consists of a root together with an ordered list of subtrees

¹⁶Generalizing what is done in [150, p. 11] for the binary case.

indexed by \mathbb{N} , each of which is an ∞ -ary tree (which may be empty) *and only finitely many of which are nonempty*. Please note that such a graph is necessarily finite (as always, the recursion is carried out only finitely many times). We define i -edges as before. We then have:

Proposition 10.8. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series $Q_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.16) is the generating formal power series for ∞ -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

More generally, the ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating formal power series for ordered forests of ∞ -ary trees on $n + 1$ total vertices with $k + 1$ components (hence $n - k$ edges) in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .

Proposition 10.9. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series $P_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.17) is x_0 times the generating formal power series for ∞ -ary trees on n vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Equivalently, $P_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for ∞ -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which the edge (if any) emanating from the root is a 0-edge and in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

We can also express the foregoing results in terms of symmetric functions, by viewing r -ary and ∞ -ary trees from a slightly different point of view. Recall first that an *ordered tree* (also called *plane tree*) is a rooted tree in which the children of each vertex (or equivalently, the edges emanating outwards from that vertex) are linearly ordered. Then an r -ary (resp. ∞ -ary) tree is simply an ordered tree in which each edge carries a label $i \in \{0, \dots, r - 1\}$ (resp. $i \in \mathbb{N}$) and the edges emanating outwards from each vertex consist, in order, of zero or one edges labeled 0, then zero or one edges labeled 1, and so forth. An edge with label i will be called an i -edge. Since the choice of labels on the edges emanating outwards from a vertex v can be made independently for each v , Proposition 10.8 can be rephrased as:

Proposition 10.10. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series $Q_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.16) is the generating formal power series for ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with j children gets a weight $e_j(\mathbf{x})$, where e_j is the elementary symmetric function.*

The other propositions have similar rephrasings.

But now we can use the well-known enumeration of ordered forests of (unlabeled) ordered trees with a given degree sequence [149, pp. 30–36]. Given a forest F of rooted trees, we define the *type* of F to be the sequence $\mathbf{r} = (r_0, r_1, \dots)$ where r_i vertices of F have out-degree i . If F has n vertices and k components, then clearly $\sum_{i \geq 0} r_i = n$ and $\sum_{i \geq 0} i r_i = n - k$; we abbreviate these conditions as $\mathbf{r} \rightarrow (n, k)$. Then [149, Theorem 5.3.10] if \mathbf{r} is a sequence satisfying $\mathbf{r} \rightarrow (n, k)$, the number of ordered forests of (unlabeled) ordered trees on n vertices and k components with type \mathbf{r} is $\frac{k}{n} \binom{n}{r_0, r_1, \dots}$. Combining this with Proposition 10.10, we conclude that

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\mathbf{r} \rightarrow (n+1, k+1)} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{n+1}{r_0, r_1, \dots} \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} e_j(\mathbf{x})^{r_j}, \quad (10.54)$$

recovering (10.20b).

10.3.2 Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type: Multi- m -ary trees

We can also give a combinatorial interpretation for the Fuss–Narayana polynomials of negative type. Let us adopt the reinterpretation of r -ary and ∞ -ary trees as ordered trees with labeled edges; and let us then consider the variant in which the number of edges of each label emanating from a given vertex, instead of being “zero or one”, is “zero or more”: we call this a **multi- r -ary** (resp. **multi- ∞ -ary**) **tree** (see Figure 16). [In particular, a multi-unary-tree ($r = 1$) is simply an ordered tree.]

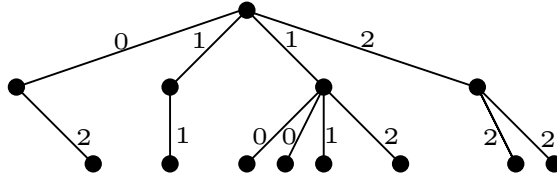


Figure 16. A multi 3-ary tree, with the edge labels shown.

Let g be the ordinary generating function for nonempty multi- r -ary trees in which each vertex gets a weight t and each i -edge gets a weight x_i . The definition leads immediately to the functional equation

$$g = t \prod_{i=0}^{r-1} (1 - x_i g)^{-1}. \quad (10.55)$$

which is precisely (10.35). Hence:

Proposition 10.11. *The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial of negative type $Q_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.37) is the generating polynomial for multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

More generally, the multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial of negative type $Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for ordered forests of multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ total vertices with $k + 1$ components (hence $n - k$ edges) in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .

Proposition 10.12. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type $Q_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.42) is the generating formal power series for multi- ∞ -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i .*

Applying (10.38) we then get:

Proposition 10.13. *The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial of negative type $P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.39) is the generating polynomial for multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which all the edges emanating from the root are 0-edges and in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Equivalently, $P_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for ordered forests of multi- m -ary trees on n vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each component gets a weight x_0 .*

Proposition 10.14. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type $P_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.43) is the generating formal power series for multi- ∞ -ary*

trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which all the edges emanating from the root are 0-edges and in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Equivalently, $P_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating formal power series for ordered forests of multi- ∞ -ary trees on n vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each component gets a weight x_0 .

Since the choice of labels on the edges emanating outwards from a vertex v can be made independently for each v , Propositions 10.12 and 10.14 can be rephrased in terms of symmetric functions as:

Proposition 10.15. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type $Q_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.42) is the generating formal power series for ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with j children gets a weight $h_j(\mathbf{x})$, where h_j is the complete homogeneous symmetric function.*

More generally, the ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating formal power series for ordered forests of ordered trees on $n + 1$ total vertices with $k + 1$ components in which each vertex with j children gets a weight $h_j(\mathbf{x})$.

Proposition 10.16. *The ∞ -variate Fuss–Narayana series of negative type $P_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.43) is the generating formal power series for ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with j children gets a weight $h_j(\mathbf{x})$, except for the root, which gets a weight x_0^k .*

By an argument similar to that leading to (10.54), we can conclude that

$$Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\mathbf{r} \rightarrow (n+1, k+1)} \frac{k+1}{n+1} \binom{n+1}{r_0, r_1, \dots} \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} h_j(\mathbf{x})^{r_j}, \quad (10.56)$$

recovering (10.45b).

10.3.3 Noncrossing partitions

The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials and symmetric functions also have interpretations in terms of noncrossing partitions. Let us recall [135] that a partition $\pi = \{B_1, \dots, B_k\}$ of the set $[n] \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \{1, \dots, n\}$ is called *noncrossing* if there do not exist four elements $a < b < c < d$ such that $a, c \in B_i$, $b, d \in B_j$ and $i \neq j$. We denote by NC_n the set of all noncrossing partitions of $[n]$; its cardinality is the Catalan number C_n .

If π is a partition of the set $[n]$, we define the *type* of π to be the list of the sizes of the blocks of π , written in weakly decreasing order; it is clearly a partition $\lambda(\pi)$ of the integer n . Kreweras [92, Théorème 4] showed that, for any $\lambda \vdash n$, the number of noncrossing partitions of $[n]$ of type λ is

$$\frac{n(n-1) \cdots (n - \ell(\lambda) + 1)}{m_1(\lambda)! m_2(\lambda)! \cdots m_n(\lambda)!}. \quad (10.57)$$

Comparing this with (10.20c) and (10.45b) specialized to $k = 0$, we see immediately that:

Proposition 10.17. *The multivariate Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions have the interpretations*

$$Q_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\pi \in \text{NC}_n} e_{\lambda(\pi)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.58)$$

$$Q_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\pi \in \text{NC}_n} h_{\lambda(\pi)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.59)$$

In other words, $Q_n^{(\infty)}$ (resp. $Q_n^{(\infty)-}$) is the generating polynomial for noncrossing partitions of $[n]$ in which each block of size i gets a weight e_i (resp. h_i).

See Stanley [148, Proposition 2.4] for a second proof of Proposition 10.17, based on a noncrossing analogue of the exponential formula due to Speicher [145].

The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ also has an interpretation as a generating polynomial for multichains in the lattice of noncrossing partitions. Recall that the set NC_n becomes a partially ordered set (poset)¹⁷ when the partitions are ordered by refinement: $\pi \leq \pi'$ if every block of π is contained in a block of π' . This poset has a minimum element $\hat{0}$ (the partition into singletons) and a maximum element $\hat{1}$ (the partition with a single block). In fact, the poset NC_n is a lattice. Moreover, it is graded of rank $n - 1$: the rank function is $\text{rk}(\pi) = n - |\pi|$ where $|\pi|$ is the number of blocks in π .

Recall now that a *chain* (resp. *multichain*) of length ℓ in a poset P is a sequence $\xi_0 < \xi_1 < \dots < \xi_\ell$ (resp. $\xi_0 \leq \xi_1 \leq \dots \leq \xi_\ell$) in P . Edelman [45, Theorem 3.2] enumerated, by bijective arguments, the chains $\xi_0 < \xi_1 < \dots < \xi_\ell$ in NC_n where the elements of the chain have specified ranks $r_0 < r_1 < \dots < r_\ell$. This enumeration is equivalent to:

Proposition 10.18. *The multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomial $Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined in (10.9) is the rank generating polynomial for multichains of length $m - 1$ in the lattice NC_{n+1} :*

$$Q_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\substack{\pi_0, \dots, \pi_{m-1} \in \text{NC}_{n+1} \\ \pi_0 \leq \dots \leq \pi_{m-1}}} x_0^{\text{rk}(\pi_0)} x_1^{\text{rk}(\pi_1) - \text{rk}(\pi_0)} \dots x_{m-1}^{\text{rk}(\pi_{m-1}) - \text{rk}(\pi_{m-2})} x_m^{n - \text{rk}(\pi_{m-1})} . \quad (10.60)$$

Specializing to $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, it follows that the number of multichains of length $m - 1$ in NC_{n+1} is the Fuss–Catalan number $C_{n+1}^{(m+1)}$ [109, Proposition 9.35].

Remarks. 1. As Stanley [148] observes, it is curious that Proposition 10.17 refers to NC_n , while Proposition 10.18 refers to NC_{n+1} .

2. Armstrong [8] gives several combinatorial interpretations of the Fuss–Narayana numbers and their generalizations to Coxeter groups. ■

¹⁷See e.g. Stanley [147, Chapter 3] for the basic definitions concerning posets.

10.3.4 Parking functions

In a classic paper, Stanley [148] has shown a connection between the Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions (though he does not use this name), parking functions, and noncrossing partitions. Here we mention only his first result [148, Proposition 2.2] and refer to the original paper for many additional developments. See also the very recent paper [151] for some interesting generalizations.

A *parking function* [162] of length n is a sequence (a_1, \dots, a_n) of positive integers such that its increasing rearrangement (b_1, \dots, b_n) satisfies $b_i \leq i$.¹⁸ Let \mathcal{P}_n denote the set of parking functions of length n . The symmetric group \mathfrak{S}_n acts on \mathcal{P}_n by permuting coordinates. For each partition λ of the integer n , let $\tau_{\lambda,n}$ be the multiplicity of the irreducible character of \mathfrak{S}_n indexed by λ in the action of \mathfrak{S}_n on \mathcal{P}_n . Then define the *parking-function symmetric function* PF_n by

$$\text{PF}_n = \sum_{\lambda \vdash n} \tau_{\lambda,n} s_\lambda \quad (10.61)$$

where s_λ are the Schur functions. (This is the Frobenius characteristic of the action of \mathfrak{S}_n on \mathcal{P}_n : see [149, section 7.18].) Then Stanley [148] shows (following Haiman [78]) that

$$\text{PF}_n = \frac{1}{n+1} [t^n] H(t)^{n+1} \quad (10.62)$$

(see also [125, Section 3.2]). Comparing this with (10.45), we see that $\text{PF}_n = Q_n^{(\infty)-}$. Applying the involution ω defined by $\omega h_n = e_n$, we see also that

$$\omega \text{PF}_n = \frac{1}{n+1} [t^n] E(t)^{n+1} \quad (10.63)$$

and hence by (10.20) that $\omega \text{PF}_n = Q_n^{(\infty)}$. Stanley's parking-function symmetric functions are thus identical to our Fuss–Narayana symmetric functions.

The equations (10.23), (10.45b) and (10.46) appear in [148, eqns. (6), (5) and (4)]; and (10.45c) appears in [151, eqn. (1.1)]. Stanley also gives formulae for PF_n in terms of the power-sum symmetric functions p_λ and the Schur functions s_λ [148, eqns. (2) and (3)]. See [148] for many further connections between PF_n , ωPF_n and noncrossing partitions.

10.4 Period $m+1$: Production-matrix method

Consider again the case of period $p = m + 1$, with $\alpha_i = x_{i+1 \bmod m+1}$. Then Proposition 8.2(b) tells us that the production matrix for the lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ is the matrix $P^{(m)\mathbf{S}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ defined by (7.6), which in the present case is

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots) L(x_2, x_2, x_2, \dots) \cdots \\ L(x_m, x_m, x_m, \dots) U^*(x_0, x_0, x_0, \dots). \quad (10.64)$$

¹⁸We follow Stanley [148] in using the convention in which $1 \leq a_i \leq n$; many other authors (e.g. [162]) use the convention $0 \leq a_i \leq n - 1$.

The elements of this matrix are given by a simple explicit formula:

Lemma 10.19. *The matrix $P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0)$ defined in (10.64) has entries*

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0)_{ij} = \begin{cases} e_{i-j+1}(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m) & \text{if } j \geq 1 \\ x_0 e_i(x_1, \dots, x_m) & \text{if } j = 0 \end{cases} \quad (10.65)$$

where e_i are the elementary symmetric functions (of course $e_i \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} 0$ for $i < 0$).

Let us in fact prove, for use in the next subsection, a slightly more general formula in which the first entry x_0 in the matrix U^* is replaced by a different value y :

Lemma 10.20. *The matrix*

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; y, x_0) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots) L(x_2, x_2, x_2, \dots) \cdots \\ L(x_m, x_m, x_m, \dots) U^*(y, x_0, x_0, \dots) \quad (10.66)$$

has entries

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; y, x_0)_{ij} = \begin{cases} e_{i-j+1}(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m) & \text{if } j \geq 1 \\ y e_i(x_1, \dots, x_m) & \text{if } j = 0 \end{cases} \quad (10.67)$$

PROOF. By induction on m . When $m = 0$ we have $P^{(0)}(; x_0) = U^*(y, x_0, x_0, \dots)$ and (10.67) holds. When $m \geq 1$, we have by definition

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; y, x_0) = L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots) P^{(m-1)}(x_2, \dots, x_m; y, x_0). \quad (10.68)$$

Then for all $i \geq 0$ and $j \geq 1$ we have by the inductive hypothesis

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; y, x_0)_{ij} = \sum_{\ell \geq 0} L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots)_{i\ell} P^{(m-1)}(x_2, \dots, x_m; y, x_0)_{\ell j} \quad (10.69a)$$

$$= x_1 e_{i-j}(x_0, x_2, \dots, x_m) + e_{i-j+1}(x_0, x_2, \dots, x_m) \quad (10.69b)$$

$$= e_{i-j+1}(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m). \quad (10.69c)$$

Similarly, for all $i \geq 0$ we have

$$P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; y, x_0)_{i0} = \sum_{\ell \geq 0} L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots)_{i\ell} P^{(m-1)}(x_2, \dots, x_m; y, x_0)_{\ell 0} \quad (10.70a)$$

$$= x_1 y e_{i-1}(x_2, \dots, x_m) + y e_i(x_2, \dots, x_m) \quad (10.70b)$$

$$= y e_i(x_1, \dots, x_m). \quad (10.70c)$$

□

Thus, the production matrix $P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0)$ is a lower-Hessenberg matrix that is Toeplitz except for the zeroth column. Let us give such matrices a name: an **AZ-matrix** is a lower-Hessenberg matrix of the form

$$AZ(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{z}) = \begin{bmatrix} z_0 & a_0 & & & & \\ z_1 & a_1 & a_0 & & & \\ z_2 & a_2 & a_1 & a_0 & & \\ z_3 & a_3 & a_2 & a_1 & a_0 & \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \quad (10.71)$$

or in other words

$$AZ(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{z})_{ij} = \begin{cases} z_i & \text{if } j = 0 \\ a_{i+1-j} & \text{if } 1 \leq j \leq i + 1 \\ 0 & \text{if } j > i + 1 \end{cases} \quad (10.72)$$

Here $\mathbf{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ and $\mathbf{z} = (z_n)_{n \geq 0}$ are sequences in a commutative ring R ; they are called, respectively, the *A-sequence* and *Z-sequence* of the matrix $AZ(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{z})$. The ordinary generating functions $A(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n t^n$ and $Z(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} z_n t^n$ are called the *A-series* and *Z-series*. We also write $AZ(A, Z)$ as a synonym for $AZ(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{z})$.

In our case we have

$$a_i = e_i(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m) = e_i(x_1, \dots, x_m) + x_0 e_{i-1}(x_1, \dots, x_m) \quad (10.73a)$$

$$z_i = x_0 e_i(x_1, \dots, x_m) \quad (10.73b)$$

or equivalently

$$A(t) = E(t; x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m) = (1 + x_0 t) E(t; x_1, \dots, x_m) \quad (10.74a)$$

$$Z(t) = x_0 E(t; x_1, \dots, x_m) = \frac{x_0}{1 + x_0 t} A(t) \quad (10.74b)$$

AZ-matrices arise as the production matrices of Riordan arrays. Let us review this connection briefly, as we shall make use of it. Let R be a commutative ring, and let $f(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} f_n t^n$ and $g(t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} g_n t^n$ be formal power series with coefficients in R ; note that g has zero constant term. Then the **Riordan array** [16, 132, 146] associated to the pair (f, g) is the infinite lower-triangular matrix $\mathcal{R}(f, g) = (\mathcal{R}(f, g)_{nk})_{n, k \geq 0}$ defined by

$$\mathcal{R}(f, g)_{nk} = [t^n] f(t)g(t)^k. \quad (10.75)$$

We call a Riordan array *normalized* if $f_0 = g_1 = 1$, or equivalently if all the diagonal elements $\mathcal{R}(f, g)_{nn} = f_0 g_1^n$ are equal to 1. We then have the following well-known characterization of Riordan arrays by their *A*- and *Z*-sequences [16, 36, 79]:

Proposition 10.21 (Production matrices of Riordan arrays). *Let L be a lower-triangular matrix (with entries in a commutative ring R) with invertible diagonal entries, and let $P = L^{-1} \Delta L$ be its production matrix. Then L is a Riordan array if and only if P is an AZ-matrix.*

More precisely, $L = \mathcal{R}(f, g)$ if and only if $P = AZ(A, Z)$, where the generating functions $(f(t), g(t))$ and $(A(t), Z(t))$ are connected by

$$g(t) = tA(g(t)), \quad f(t) = \frac{f_0}{1 - tZ(g(t))} \quad (10.76)$$

Proofs can be found in [16, 36, 79, 140].

So, in the periodic case with period $m + 1$, the matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials is a Riordan array $\mathcal{R}(f, g)$. We have $Z(t) = \frac{x_0}{1+x_0t}A(t)$ and $f_0 = 1$, hence $f(t) = 1 + x_0g(t)$. Using Lagrange inversion to solve (10.76), we find that $P_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ are given for $n > 0$ by

$$P_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} [t^n] f(t) g(t)^k \quad (10.77a)$$

$$= [t^n] g(t)^k + x_0 [t^n] g(t)^{k+1} \quad (10.77b)$$

$$= \frac{k}{n} [t^{n-k}] A(t)^n + x_0 \frac{k+1}{n} [t^{n-k-1}] A(t)^{n+1} \quad (10.77c)$$

$$= Q_{n-1,k-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) + x_0 Q_{n-1,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad (10.77d)$$

where $A(t) = E(t; x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m)$ and $Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is given by (10.9) [cf. also (10.20)]. When $k = 0$ this agrees with (10.11) [cf. also (10.17)]. In conclusion, we have

$$P_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = \begin{cases} \delta_{k0} & \text{if } n = 0 \\ Q_{n-1,k-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) + x_0 Q_{n-1,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) & \text{if } n \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (10.78)$$

10.5 Period $m + 1$: Row-generating polynomials

Having computed the lower-triangular matrix $\mathbf{S}^{(m)} = (S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ of generalized m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials for the case of period $m + 1$, let us now consider its row-generating polynomials

$$S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi) = \sum_{k=0}^n S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) \xi^k \quad (10.79)$$

and more generally its row-generating matrix

$$S_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{\ell=k}^n S_{n,\ell}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) \xi^{\ell-k} \quad (10.80)$$

[cf. (5.1)/(5.2)], where ξ is an indeterminate. Please recall that the definition (10.80) can be written in matrix form as

$$\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\xi) = \mathbf{S}^{(m)} T_\xi \quad (10.81)$$

where T_ξ is the lower-triangular Toeplitz matrix of powers of ξ [cf. (5.4)]. We write $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}; \xi)$ for the row-generating polynomial $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}; \xi)$ specialized to the weights $\alpha_i = x_{i+1 \bmod m+1}$.

We have just shown that the production matrix for $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}$ for the case of period $m+1$ is the matrix $P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0)$ defined in (10.64)/(10.65). It then follows immediately from (10.81) and Lemma 8.1 that the production matrix for $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}(\xi)$ is $T_\xi^{-1} P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0) T_\xi$. It turns out that this latter matrix has a very simple form, as a result of the following simple identities:

Lemma 10.22.

(a) Let $L(s_1, s_2, \dots)$ be the lower-bidiagonal matrix defined by (7.2). Then

$$T_\xi^{-1} L(s_1, s_2, \dots) T_\xi = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & & & & & & \\ s_1 & 1 & & & & & \\ (s_2 - s_1)\xi & s_2 & 1 & & & & \\ (s_3 - s_2)\xi^2 & (s_3 - s_2)\xi & s_3 & 1 & & & \\ (s_4 - s_3)\xi^3 & (s_4 - s_3)\xi^2 & (s_4 - s_3)\xi & s_4 & 1 & & \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \quad (10.82)$$

or in other words

$$[T_\xi^{-1} L(s_1, s_2, \dots) T_\xi]_{ij} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } i = j \\ s_i & \text{if } i = j + 1 \\ (s_i - s_{i-1})\xi^{i-j-1} & \text{if } i > j + 1 \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \quad (10.83)$$

(b) Let $U^*(s_1, s_2, \dots)$ be the upper-bidiagonal matrix defined by (7.3). Then

$$T_\xi^{-1} U^*(s_1, s_2, \dots) T_\xi = \begin{bmatrix} s_1 + \xi & 1 & & & & & \\ (s_2 - s_1)\xi & s_2 & 1 & & & & \\ (s_3 - s_2)\xi^2 & (s_3 - s_2)\xi & s_3 & 1 & & & \\ (s_4 - s_3)\xi^3 & (s_4 - s_3)\xi^2 & (s_4 - s_3)\xi & s_4 & 1 & & \\ \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \vdots & \ddots & \ddots \end{bmatrix} \quad (10.84)$$

or in other words

$$[T_\xi^{-1} U^*(s_1, s_2, \dots) T_\xi]_{ij} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } i = j - 1 \\ s_1 + \xi & \text{if } i = j = 0 \\ s_{i+1} & \text{if } i = j \geq 1 \\ (s_{i+1} - s_i)\xi^{i-j} & \text{if } i > j \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \quad (10.85)$$

PROOF. (a) We have $T_\xi^{-1} = L(-\xi, -\xi, \dots)$ and hence

$$[T_\xi^{-1} L(s_1, s_2, \dots)]_{ij} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } i = j \\ s_i - \xi & \text{if } i = j + 1 \\ -s_{i-1}\xi & \text{if } i = j + 2 \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \quad (10.86)$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} [T_\xi^{-1} L(s_1, s_2, \dots) T_\xi]_{ik} &= \xi^{i-k} \mathbb{I}[k \leq i] + (s_i - \xi) \xi^{i-1-k} \mathbb{I}[k \leq i-1] \\ &\quad + (-s_{i-1}\xi) \xi^{i-2-k} \mathbb{I}[k \leq i-2], \end{aligned} \quad (10.87)$$

which coincides with (10.83).

Part (b) is proven similarly. \square

Specializing this lemma to $s_1 = s_2 = \dots = s$, we have

$$T_\xi^{-1} L(s, s, s, \dots) T_\xi = L(s, s, s, \dots) \quad (10.88)$$

(i.e. T_ξ and $L(s, s, s, \dots)$ commute, because both are lower-triangular Toeplitz matrices) and

$$T_\xi^{-1} U^*(s, s, s, \dots) T_\xi = U^*(s + \xi, s, s, \dots). \quad (10.89)$$

Using the definition (10.64) of $P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0)$, we see that

$$\begin{aligned} T_\xi^{-1} P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0) T_\xi \\ &= L(x_1, x_1, x_1, \dots) L(x_2, x_2, x_2, \dots) \cdots L(x_m, x_m, x_m, \dots) U^*(x_0 + \xi, x_0, x_0, \dots) \end{aligned} \quad (10.90a)$$

$$= P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0 + \xi, x_0) \quad (10.90b)$$

as defined in (10.66). By Lemma 9.1 this matrix is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m and ξ . From Theorem 9.7 we therefore conclude:

Theorem 10.23 (Hankel-total positivity of row-generating polynomials of multivariate Fuss–Narayana polynomials). *For each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $(P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}; \xi))_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m and ξ .*

But we can say more: by (10.90a) we see that the matrix $P^{(m)}(x_1, \dots, x_m; x_0 + \xi, x_0)$ is nothing other than the matrix $P^{(m)\mathbf{S}}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ defined by (7.6) where $\alpha_i = x_{i+1 \bmod m+1}$ except that $\alpha_m = x_0 + \xi$. Calling these new weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}'$, we see that

$$P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}; \xi) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}'). \quad (10.91)$$

So the row-generating polynomials $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}; \xi)$ are themselves given by an m -branched S-fraction that is a small modification of the one for $P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = P_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}; 0)$.

The coefficientwise total positivity of the production matrix (10.90) also implies, by Theorem 9.4, that the lower-triangular row-generating matrix (10.80) is coefficientwise totally positive. But this latter fact has a much simpler proof: it is an immediate consequence of the matrix identity (10.81) and the coefficientwise total positivity of $\mathbf{S}^{(m)}$ (Theorem 9.10) and T_ξ (Lemma 9.2).

11 Weights eventually periodic of period $m+1$ or m

The results of the previous section can be generalized to handle some cases in which the weights α are eventually periodic of period $m+1$ or m , i.e. they consist of a finite sequence followed by a periodic sequence. As a special case we will obtain the *multivariate Aval polynomials* [12, 107]. We will use the recurrence method from Sections 10.1 and 10.2.

11.1 Period $m+1$

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let α be given by

$$\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m} = y_1, \dots, y_\ell, x_0, \dots, x_m, x_0, \dots, x_m, \dots \quad (11.1)$$

for some $\ell \geq 1$. We again use the recurrence (2.26). The periodicity of the α starting at $\alpha_{m+\ell}$ implies the periodicity of the f_k starting at $k = \ell$; therefore the product $f_k \cdots f_{k+m}$ is independent of k for $k \geq \ell$, let us call it F . It is the same quantity F that was calculated in Section 10.1 and is given by (10.7)/(10.9). Then $f_\ell(t) = 1 + x_0 t F(t)$ is the same quantity that was given by (10.10)/(10.11); and more generally $f_{\ell+i}(t) = 1 + x_i t F(t)$ for $0 \leq i \leq m$.

Now we can work backwards: from (2.27) we have

$$f_{\ell-1}(t) = \frac{1}{1 - y_\ell t f_\ell(t) \cdots f_{\ell+m-1}(t)} \quad (11.2a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_\ell t \frac{F(t)}{f_{\ell+m}(t)}} \quad (11.2b)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_\ell t \frac{F(t)}{1 + x_m t F(t)}} \quad (11.2c)$$

$$= \frac{1 + x_m t F(t)}{1 + (x_m - y_\ell) t F(t)}. \quad (11.2d)$$

And then (if $\ell \geq 2$) we can write

$$f_{\ell-2}(t) = \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t f_{\ell-1}(t) \cdots f_{\ell+m-2}(t)} \quad (11.3a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t f_{\ell-1}(t) \frac{F(t)}{f_{\ell+m-1}(t) f_{\ell+m}(t)}} \quad (11.3b)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t \frac{F(t)}{[1 + (x_m - y_\ell) t F(t)] [1 + x_{m-1} t F(t)]}} \quad (11.3c)$$

and so forth. The equations get rather messy as ℓ grows, so we limit ourselves to working out the case $\ell = 1$.

Applying Lagrange inversion to (10.5) and (11.2d) with $\ell = 1$, we obtain for $n \geq 1$

$$[t^n] f_0(t) = \sum_{\substack{j_\star, j_0, \dots, j_m \geq 0 \\ j_\star + j_0 + \dots + j_m = n}} \frac{j_\star}{n} y_1 (y_1 - x_m)^{j_\star - 1} \prod_{i=0}^m \binom{n}{j_i} x_i^{j_i}. \quad (11.4)$$

We do not know whether these polynomials have any combinatorially interesting specializations (other than, of course, the periodic case $y_1 = x_m$).

11.2 Period m

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let α now be given by

$$\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m} = y_1, \dots, y_\ell, x_0, \dots, x_{m-1}, x_0, \dots, x_{m-1}, \dots \quad (11.5)$$

for some $\ell \geq 1$. This time we use the recurrence (2.27). The periodicity of the α starting at $\alpha_{m+\ell}$ implies the periodicity of the f_k starting at $k = \ell$; therefore the product $f_{k+1} \cdots f_{k+m}$ is independent of k for $k \geq \ell - 1$ (note that this is now $\ell - 1$, not ℓ), let us call it G . It is the same quantity G that was calculated in Section 10.2 and is given by (10.36)/(10.37). Then $f_\ell(t) = 1/[1 - x_0 t G(t)]$ is the same quantity that was given by (10.38)/(10.39); and more generally $f_{\ell+i}(t) = 1/[1 - x_i t G(t)]$ for $0 \leq i \leq m - 1$.

Now we can again work backwards: from (2.27) we have

$$f_{\ell-1}(t) = \frac{1}{1 - y_\ell t f_\ell(t) \cdots f_{\ell+m-1}(t)} \quad (11.6a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_\ell t G(t)}, \quad (11.6b)$$

which is even simpler than (11.2). And then (if $\ell \geq 2$) we can write

$$f_{\ell-2}(t) = \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t f_{\ell-1}(t) \cdots f_{\ell+m-2}(t)} \quad (11.7a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t f_{\ell-1}(t) \frac{G(t)}{f_{\ell+m-1}(t)}} \quad (11.7b)$$

$$= \frac{1}{1 - y_{\ell-1} t G(t) \frac{1 - x_{m-1} t G(t)}{1 - y_\ell t G(t)}}. \quad (11.7c)$$

Once again the equations get rather messy as ℓ grows, so we limit ourselves to working out the case $\ell = 1$.

Before proceeding with the $\ell = 1$ case, it is convenient to rename y_1, x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} as x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m . Then, applying Lagrange inversion to (10.34) and (11.6b), we obtain for $n \geq 1$

$$[t^n] f_0(t) = \sum_{\substack{j_0, \dots, j_m \geq 0 \\ j_0 + \dots + j_m = n}} \frac{j_0}{n} x_0^{j_0} \prod_{i=1}^m \binom{n + j_i - 1}{j_i} x_i^{j_i}. \quad (11.8)$$

We call the right-hand side of (11.8) the *multivariate Aval polynomial* of order m , written $A_n^{(m)}(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_m)$, because the coefficients in (11.8) appeared first (to our knowledge) in Aval's paper [12, Remarks 2.5 and 3.2], along with a combinatorial interpretation in terms of m -Dyck paths that is different from the one implicit in our m -S-fraction; see also [107]. It follows from Theorem 9.8 that, for each integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence of multivariate Aval polynomials of order m (with of course $A_0^{(m)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} 1$) is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m .

12 Weights quasi-affine or factorized of period $m+1$ or m

The polynomials $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ defined by the S-fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(x, y, u, v) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{(x+u)t}{1 - \frac{(y+v)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (12.1)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = x + (k-1)u \quad (12.2a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = y + (k-1)v \quad (12.2b)$$

contain many classical polynomials as specializations: these include the Eulerian polynomials [see (12.6) below], the Stirling cycle polynomials [see (12.9)/(12.11) below], and the record-antirecord permutation polynomials [see (13.3)/(13.4)/(13.20) below], among many others.¹⁹ Since $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree n , it has three “truly independent” variables. By Euler's continued fraction (1.2), we have $P_n(1, 1, 1, 1) = n!$, so it is natural to expect that $P_n(x, y, u, v)$ enumerates permutations of $[n]$ according to some natural trivariate statistic. Very recently, Zeng

¹⁹See [143] for further examples.

and one of us [143] found two alternative versions of this trivariate statistic:

$$P_n(x, y, u, v) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{arec}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} u^{n-\text{exc}(\sigma)-\text{arec}(\sigma)} v^{\text{exc}(\sigma)-\text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (12.3a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} x^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} y^{\text{erec}(\sigma)} u^{n-\text{exc}(\sigma)-\text{cyc}(\sigma)} v^{\text{exc}(\sigma)-\text{erec}(\sigma)} \quad (12.3b)$$

where the sum runs over permutations of $[n]$, and $\text{arec}(\sigma)$, $\text{erec}(\sigma)$, $\text{exc}(\sigma)$, $\text{cyc}(\sigma)$ denote the number of antirecords, exclusive records, excedances and cycles in σ .²⁰ We say that the weights (12.2) are **quasi-affine** of period 2 because α_i is affine in i within each residue class of $i \bmod 2$.

Here we would like to consider the generalization of this setup to m -branched S-fractions, in which the coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ are quasi-affine of period either $m+1$ or m . For period p we will write

$$\alpha_{m+j+pk} = x_j + ku_j \quad (12.4)$$

where $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{p-1})$ and $\mathbf{u} = (u_0, \dots, u_{p-1})$ are indeterminates. We let $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{u})$ be the polynomials obtained by specializing the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ to the weights (12.4). [When $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{0}$ the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are periodic of period p , and the polynomials $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{0})$ reduce to the polynomials $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x})$ defined at the beginning of Section 10.] We are not yet able to obtain a complete combinatorial interpretation, analogous to (12.3), of the polynomials $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{u})$, but we are able to handle some interesting special cases.

In particular we will treat the case $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{x}$, i.e.

$$\alpha_{m+j+pk} = (k+1)x_j, \quad (12.5)$$

with period $p = m+1$ or m . For $(m, p) = (1, 2)$ these are the homogenized Eulerian polynomials

$$P_n^{(1,2)}(x_0, x_1, x_0, x_1) = P_n(x_0, x_1, x_0, x_1) = \sum_{k=0}^n \left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle x_0^{n-k} x_1^k, \quad (12.6)$$

where the Eulerian number $\left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle$ is the number of permutations of $[n]$ with k excedances.^{21,22} We therefore refer to (12.5) as the **Eulerian-quasi-affine** weights,

²⁰Given a permutation $\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n$, an index $i \in [n]$ is called a *record* (or *left-to-right maximum*) if $\sigma(j) < \sigma(i)$ for all $j < i$ [note in particular that the index 1 is always a record]; an *antirecord* (or *right-to-left minimum*) if $\sigma(j) > \sigma(i)$ for all $j > i$ [note in particular that the index n is always an antirecord]; an *exclusive record* if it is a record and not also an antirecord; and an *exclusive antirecord* if it is an antirecord and not also a record. An index $i \in [n]$ is called an *excedance* if $\sigma(i) > i$.

²¹Here we are using the convention [75] in which (for $n \geq 1$) $\left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle$ is nonzero for $0 \leq k \leq n-1$. Many authors use the opposite convention in which $\left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle$ is nonzero for $1 \leq k \leq n$; then x_0 and x_1 have to be interchanged.

²²The identity (12.6) — that is, the S-fraction for the Eulerian polynomials — was found by

and to the polynomials $P_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ as ***multivariate Eulerian polynomials***. We will show that they contain the m th-order Eulerian polynomials [15] as specializations.

This identification will allow us, among other things, to resolve a mystery from [46]. It was shown in [46] that the reversed second-order Eulerian polynomials $\bar{E}_n^{[2]}(x)$ [defined in (12.83) below] are given by a T-fraction (2.20) with coefficients $\delta_i = (i-1)(x-1)$ and $\alpha_i = i$. Since here δ_i is *not* coefficientwise nonnegative (or even pointwise nonnegative when $0 \leq x < 1$), the general theory of [140] — that is, the $m = 1$ case of Theorem 9.9 — says nothing about the Hankel-total positivity of the reversed second-order Eulerian polynomials. And yet, it was found empirically that the sequence of reversed second-order Eulerian polynomials *is* coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive: this was tested through the 13×13 Hankel matrix. Here we will show why (Corollary 12.35 below): in addition to the T-fraction found in [46], the reversed second-order Eulerian polynomials are *also* given by a 2-branched S-fraction with Eulerian-quasi-affine coefficients (12.5), namely $(x_0, x_1, x_2) = (1, 1, x)$ or $(1, x, 1)$. The coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity is then an immediate consequence of Theorem 9.8. In fact, we will show more generally that, for every $m \geq 1$, the m th-order Eulerian polynomials have an m -branched S-fraction with Eulerian-quasi-affine coefficients (12.5) in which one of x_1, \dots, x_m is x and all the other x_i (including x_0) are 1. This again implies the coefficientwise Hankel-total positivity. In our opinion this story illustrates some of the power of the branched continued fractions to resolve problems that seemed mysterious (or simply intractable) from the point of view of the classical continued fractions, and indeed to provide multivariate generalizations.

In fact, we can handle some weights that are considerably more general than (12.5), namely

$$\alpha_{m+j+pk} = (k+1)c_k x_j \quad (12.7)$$

where $\mathbf{c} = (c_k)_{k \geq 0}$ are indeterminates. We call these weights ***factorized*** of period p , and we write $\hat{P}_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ for the corresponding polynomials. Of course, they reduce to $P_n^{(m,p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ when $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{1}$. We call $\hat{P}_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ the ***extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials***.

The plan of this section is as follows: First we discuss briefly the special case $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{1}$, which leads to multifactorials (Section 12.1). Then we interpret the general Eulerian-quasi-affine case $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{u}$ [i.e. (12.5)] with period $m+1$, and more generally the factorized case (12.7) with period $m+1$, in terms of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees; and we also take the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$ to obtain the Eulerian symmetric

Stieltjes [154, section 79]. Stieltjes does not specifically mention the Eulerian polynomials, but he does state that the continued fraction is the formal Laplace transform of $(1-y)/(e^{t(y-1)} - y)$, which is well known to be the exponential generating function of the Eulerian polynomials. Stieltjes also refrains from showing the proof: “Pour abrégé, je supprime toujours les artifices qu’il faut employer pour obtenir la transformation de l’intégrale définie en fraction continue” (!). But a proof is sketched, albeit also without much explanation, in the book of Wall [159, pp. 207–208]. The J-fraction corresponding to the contraction of this S-fraction was proven, by combinatorial methods, by Flajolet [51, Theorem 3B(ii) with a slight typographical error]. Dumont [40, Propositions 2 and 7] gave a direct combinatorial proof of the S-fraction, based on an interpretation of the Eulerian polynomials in terms of “bipartite involutions of $[2n]$ ” and a bijection of these onto Dyck paths.

functions (Section 12.2). By suitable modifications we can interpret the Eulerian-quasi-affine case $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{u}$ with period m , and more generally the factorized case with period m , in terms of increasing multi- m -ary trees, and take the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$ to obtain the Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type; however, some of these results are still conjectural (Section 12.3). In Section 12.4 we make a brief observation on the analogy between the periodic and quasi-affine cases. And finally, we specialize the multivariate Eulerian polynomials in order to relate them to m th-order Eulerian polynomials (Section 12.5).

12.1 Multifactorials

Let us denote by

$$F_n^{(r)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (1 + jr) \quad (12.8)$$

the r th-order multifactorials, so that $F_n^{(0)} = 1$, $F_n^{(1)} = n!$, $F_n^{(2)} = (2n - 1)!!$, $F_n^{(3)} = (3n - 2)!!!$ and so forth. The multifactorials are specializations of the homogenized Stirling cycle polynomials

$$C_n(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (x + jy) \quad (12.9a)$$

$$= \sum_{k=0}^n \begin{bmatrix} n \\ k \end{bmatrix} x^k y^{n-k} \quad (12.9b)$$

where $\begin{bmatrix} n \\ k \end{bmatrix}$ is the number of permutations of $[n]$ with k cycles (or k records, or k antirecords): we have

$$F_n^{(r)} = C_n(1, r) = r^n C_n(1/r, 1). \quad (12.10)$$

Already Euler [48, section 26] [49]²³ showed that the ordinary generating function of the Stirling cycle polynomials has the S-fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} C_n(x, y) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{xt}{1 - \frac{yt}{1 - \frac{(x+y)t}{1 - \frac{2yt}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (12.11)$$

²³See footnote 4 in the Introduction for the history of [48]. The paper [49], which is E616 in Eneström's [47] catalogue, was apparently presented to the St. Petersburg Academy in 1776, and published posthumously in 1788. See footnote 32 in Section 13 below for discussion of Euler's method for proving (12.11).

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = x + (k-1)y$ and $\alpha_{2k} = ky$. Therefore the multifactorials have a classical S-fraction with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = 1 + (k-1)r$ and $\alpha_{2k} = kr$. In terms of (12.3) we have $C_n(x, y) = P_n(x, y, y, y)$.

Here we will show that the multifactorials are also given by very simple m -branched S-fractions in which the weights are Eulerian-quasi-affine of period $m+1$ or m : namely, $P_n^{(m, m+1)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m)}$ (Corollary 12.2) and $P_n^{(m, m)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m+1)}$ (Corollary 12.21). These results will, in fact, be corollaries of more powerful results in which we supply a combinatorial interpretation for the multivariate polynomials $P_n^{(m, m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ and $P_n^{(m, m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$.

Remarks. 1. These different representations illustrate once again the extreme nonuniqueness of m -S-fractions with $m \geq 2$. For instance, $(3n-2)!!!$ is given by at least three different types of 3-S-fractions:

- $\alpha = 1, 3, 0, 0, 4, 6, 0, 0, 7, 9, 0, 0, 10, 12, 0, 0, \dots$ (and uncountably many variants), coming from the classical S-fraction (12.11) via Proposition 3.1;
- $\alpha = 1, 1, 2, 0, 2, 3, 3, 0, 4, 4, 5, 0, 5, 6, 6, 0, \dots$ (and uncountably many variants), coming from the 2-S-fraction $P_n^{(2, 2)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(3)}$ via Proposition 3.1; and
- $\alpha = 1, 1, 1, 1, 2, 2, 2, 2, 3, 3, 3, 3, 4, 4, 4, 4, \dots$, coming from the 3-S-fraction $P_n^{(3, 4)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(3)}$.

2. For period $p = 1$, the sequences $P_n^{(m, 1)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1})$ appear to have combinatorial interpretations as the number of linear extensions of certain grid-like posets [112]: see [110, A274644] for $(m, p) = (2, 1)$ and $(3, 2)$, [110, A274763] for $(m, p) = (3, 1)$, and [112] for $(m, p) = (4, 1)$. We hope to investigate this connection in a future paper.

3. For periods $p \neq 1, m, m+1$ we have been unable to find any combinatorial interpretation of the polynomials $P_n^{(m, p)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ — or even of the numbers $P_n^{(m, p)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1})$ — other than the obvious one in terms of m -Dyck paths. Indeed, the sequences $P_n^{(m, p)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1})$ for $p \neq 1, m, m+1$ are not currently in [110] (with the exception, noted above, of $(m, p) = (3, 2)$). ■

12.2 Period $m+1$: Increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees

In Section 10.3 we gave the recursive definition of an r -ary tree, and we said what is meant by an i -edge in such a tree. There the vertices were unlabeled; now we label them. A *labeled r -ary tree* on n vertices is an r -ary tree on n vertices in which the vertices are given distinct labels from the set $[n]$. An *increasing r -ary tree* is a labeled r -ary tree in which the label of each child is greater than the label of its parent; otherwise put, the labels increase along every path downwards from the root (see Figure 17 for an example). The meaning of i -edge is unchanged, since it does not refer to the labels.

It is well known [147, p. 24] that the number of increasing binary trees on n vertices is $n!$, and more generally that the number of increasing r -ary trees on n vertices is the multifactorial $F_n^{(r-1)}$ [18, p. 30, Example 1]. We would now like to generalize this enumeration to a multivariate polynomial.

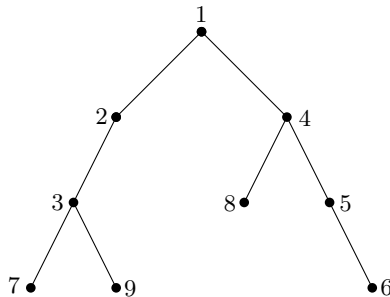


Figure 17. An increasing binary tree (the edges are left or right).

12.2.1 Multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions: Definitions and statement of results

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_m)$ be indeterminates. Let $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ be the generating polynomial for increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i ; and more generally, let $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ be the generating polynomial for unordered forests of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ total vertices with $k+1$ components in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . (If we were to consider instead ordered forests, it would just multiply the polynomial by $(k+1)!$, since the trees are labeled and hence distinguishable.) And finally, define $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ by

$$\mathcal{P}_0^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = 1 \quad (12.12a)$$

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = x_0 \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (12.12b)$$

$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is therefore the generating polynomial for increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices in which the only edge (if any) emanating from the root is a 0-edge and in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Both $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ are homogeneous polynomials of degree n , while $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is homogeneous of degree $n-k$; we refer to them collectively as ***multivariate Eulerian polynomials***. In particular, $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{1}) = \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m)}$ for $n \geq 1$.

We will prove:

Theorem 12.1 (Branched continued fractions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have:*

(a) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = P_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$, which by definition equals $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by the Eulerian-quasi-affine formula (12.5) with period $p = m+1$.

(b) $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are given by

$$\beta_i^{(\ell)} = \frac{(i+1)!}{(i-\ell)!} e_{\ell+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m) \quad (12.13)$$

(here $e_{\ell+1}$ is the elementary symmetric polynomial of degree $\ell+1$).

(c) $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are again given by (12.13).

Since $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m)}$, it follows that:

Corollary 12.2 (Eulerian-quasi-affine m -S-fraction of period $m + 1$ for multifactorials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have $P_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m)}$.*

Please note that the polynomials $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ are symmetric in x_0, \dots, x_m , since we can make a global permutation of the child-order indices $0, \dots, m$. It therefore follows from (12.12b) and Theorem 12.1(a) that the polynomials $P_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ are, up to the prefactor x_0 , also symmetric in x_0, \dots, x_m — a fact that seems far from obvious from the branched continued fraction or from the combinatorial definition via m -Dyck paths. The invariance of $P_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ under permutations of x_1, \dots, x_m also illustrates once again the nonuniqueness of m -S-fractions with $m \geq 2$.

Combining Theorems 12.1(a) and 9.8, and using (12.12b) to handle $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$, we conclude:

Corollary 12.3 (Hankel-total positivity of the multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequences $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ and $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ are coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m .*

We will also show:

Lemma 12.4. *The production matrix $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ [cf. (7.4)] associated to the weights (12.13) is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m .*

Using Theorems 9.14 and 12.1(b) we obtain an alternate proof of the Hankel-total positivity of $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$; and from Theorems 9.15 and 12.1(c) we conclude:

Corollary 12.5 (Total positivity of lower-triangular matrix of multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the lower-triangular matrix $(\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_m .*

We also have explicit expressions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$, and a recurrence for $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}$, given by repeated application of a first-order linear differential operator:

Proposition 12.6 (Differential expressions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have*

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m + x_0)^n 1 \quad (12.14)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=0}^m x_i \right)^n 1 \quad (12.15)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + (k+1) \sum_{i=0}^m x_i \right) \mathcal{Q}_{n-1,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) + \mathcal{Q}_{n-1,k-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) + \delta_{n0} \delta_{k0} \quad (12.16)$$

where

$$\mathcal{D}_m = \sum_{i=0}^m \left(x_i \sum_{\substack{0 \leq j \leq m \\ j \neq i}} x_j \right) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}. \quad (12.17)$$

Remarks. 1. For the classical ($m = 1$) homogenized Eulerian polynomials $A_n(x, y) = \sum_{k=0}^n \langle n \rangle_k x^{n-k} y^k$, the recurrence $A_{n+1}(x, y) = [xy(\partial/\partial x + \partial/\partial y) + x]A_n(x, y)$ can easily be derived from the classic differential recurrence for the univariate Eulerian polynomials $A_n(y) = A_n(1, y)$, i.e. $A_{n+1}(y) = (1+ny)A_n(y) + y(1-y)A'_n(y)$ [117, p. 10]. The interesting thing here is that the n -dependent recurrence for the univariate polynomials becomes an n -independent recurrence for the homogeneous polynomials. This observation — which is perhaps not as well known as it should be — goes back to Carlitz [28] (see also [158]).

2. The polynomials $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ for $m = 2$ were introduced by Dumont [39], who gave also the combinatorial interpretations in terms of increasing ternary trees [39, Proposition 1] and Stirling permutations [39, Proposition 3] (for the latter, see Section 12.5 below). ■

Whenever $m < m'$ we have $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(x_0, \dots, x_m) = \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m')}(x_0, \dots, x_m, 0, \dots, 0)$ and $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(x_0; x_1, \dots, x_m) = \mathcal{P}_n^{(m')}(x_0; x_1, \dots, x_m, 0, \dots, 0)$: this follows immediately from the combinatorial definition, or alternatively (for $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$) from the branched continued fraction using Theorem 12.1(a) and Proposition 3.1. We can therefore pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$: let $\mathbf{x} = (x_i)_{i \geq 0}$ be indeterminates, and define $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$, $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ in terms of increasing ∞ -ary trees in the obvious way. Here $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ are symmetric functions in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} , while $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ is a symmetric function up to the prefactor x_0 ; they are homogeneous of degree n or $n - k$. We refer to $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ as the ***Eulerian symmetric functions***.

Theorem 12.1(b,c), Corollaries 12.3 and 12.5, and Proposition 12.6 extend immediately to $m = \infty$. Let us state only the result on Hankel-total positivity:

Corollary 12.7 (Hankel-total positivity of ∞ -variate Eulerian series). *The sequences $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ and $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ are Hankel-totally positive with respect to the coefficientwise order on the formal-power-series ring $\mathbb{Z}[[\mathbf{x}]]$.*

Remark. For $\mathcal{Q}^{(\infty)}$ we can prove a stronger result: namely, that the sequence $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ is Hankel-totally positive with respect to the Schur order on the ring of symmetric functions, which is stronger than the monomial (= coefficientwise) order. See the Remark after the proof of Lemma 12.13 at the end of Section 12.2.3. ■

We can say more about the Eulerian symmetric functions $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ by using the interpretation of ∞ -ary trees as ordered trees in which each edge carries a label $i \in \mathbb{N}$ and the edges emanating outwards from each vertex consist, in order, of zero or one edges labeled 0, then zero or one edges labeled 1, etc. (Section 10.3). Since the choice of labels on the edges emanating outwards from a vertex v can be made independently for each v , the definition of $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ can be rephrased as: $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating formal power series for increasing ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with i children gets a weight $e_i(\mathbf{x})$, where e_i is the elementary symmetric function; and an analogous rephrasing holds for $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$. But now let us define the *degree sequence* λ of a rooted tree T to be the list of its vertices' out-degrees, written

in weakly decreasing order and with final zeroes removed. Thus, if T has $n+1$ vertices, λ is a partition of n . Then the definition of $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ can be further rephrased as:

Proposition 12.8 (Eulerian symmetric functions in terms of elementary symmetric functions). *For each partition λ of n , let a_λ be the number of increasing ordered trees on $n+1$ vertices that have degree sequence λ . Then*

$$\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\lambda \vdash n} a_\lambda e_\lambda(\mathbf{x}). \quad (12.18)$$

For small n , the coefficients a_λ can be computed by explicit enumeration of ordered trees together with the well-known result [89, pp. 67 and 609, exercise 20] (see also [70, Lemma 2.1] for a refinement) that the number of increasing labelings of a rooted tree on $n+1$ vertices is $(n+1)!$ divided by the product of subtree sizes. However, a more efficient method is to compute $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ by using the production matrix $P(\beta)$ [i.e. (7.4) with $m = \infty$] for the weights (12.13). The first few $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ are:

$$\mathcal{Q}_0^{(\infty)} = 1 \quad (12.19a)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_1^{(\infty)} = e_1 \quad (12.19b)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_2^{(\infty)} = e_1^2 + 2e_2 \quad (12.19c)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_3^{(\infty)} = e_1^3 + 8e_1e_2 + 6e_3 \quad (12.19d)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_4^{(\infty)} = e_1^4 + 22e_1^2e_2 + 16e_2^2 + 42e_1e_3 + 24e_4 \quad (12.19e)$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_5^{(\infty)} = e_1^5 + 52e_1^3e_2 + 136e_1e_2^2 + 192e_1^2e_3 + 180e_2e_3 + 264e_1e_4 + 120e_5 \quad (12.19f)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{Q}_6^{(\infty)} = & e_1^6 + 114e_1^4e_2 + 720e_1^2e_2^2 + 272e_2^3 + 732e_1^3e_3 + 2304e_1e_2e_3 \\ & + 540e_3^2 + 1824e_1^2e_4 + 1248e_2e_4 + 1920e_1e_5 + 720e_6 \end{aligned} \quad (12.19g)$$

Since the number of increasing ordered trees on $n+1$ vertices is $(2n-1)!!$ [18, p. 30, Corollary 1(iv)], we have $\sum_{\lambda \vdash n} a_\lambda = (2n-1)!!$; and since the number of increasing r -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices is the multifactorial $F_{n+1}^{(r-1)}$ [18, p. 30, Example 1], we have

$$\sum_{\lambda \vdash n} a_\lambda \prod_i \binom{r}{\lambda_i} = F_{n+1}^{(r-1)}. \quad (12.20)$$

But these identities are insufficient to determine all the a_λ .

Open Problem 12.9. Find an explicit formula for the a_λ .

We can, however, obtain an explicit expansion for the Eulerian symmetric functions $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ in terms of the complete homogeneous symmetric functions h_λ . We use the method and notation of Bergeron, Flajolet and Salvy [18].²⁴ Let $Y_n = Y_n(\phi)$ be the generating polynomial for increasing ordered trees on n vertices in which

²⁴See also [19, Chapter 5] for a more general context. Increasing ordered trees are treated in [19, Example 5, pp. 364–365].

each vertex with i children gets a weight ϕ_i , where $\phi_0 = 1$; and more generally, let $Y_{n,j} = Y_{n,j}(\boldsymbol{\phi})$ be the generating polynomial for unordered forests of increasing ordered trees on n total vertices with j components in which each vertex with i children gets a weight ϕ_i . Here the weights $\boldsymbol{\phi} = (\phi_i)_{i \geq 1}$ are in the first instance indeterminates, but they can later be specialized to values in any commutative ring containing the rationals. We will use the exponential generating functions $Y(t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} Y_n t^n/n!$ and $Y(t)^j/j! = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} Y_{n,j} t^n/n!$ and the ordinary generating function $\phi(w) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \phi_k w^k$. Then standard enumerative arguments [18, Theorem 1] show that $Y(t)$ satisfies the ordinary differential equation $Y'(t) = \phi(Y(t))$, leading to the implicit equation

$$t = \int_0^{Y(t)} \frac{dw}{\phi(w)}. \quad (12.21)$$

Introducing $\psi(w) = 1/\phi(w) = 1 + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \psi_i w^i$, we then have

$$t = Y(t) f(Y(t)) \quad \text{where} \quad f(y) = 1 + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{\psi_i}{i+1} y^i. \quad (12.22)$$

Solving $Y(t) = t/f(Y(t))$ by Lagrange inversion (10.4) with $H(u) = u^j/j!$ gives

$$Y_{n,j} = n! [t^n] \frac{Y(t)^j}{j!} = \frac{(n-1)!}{(j-1)!} [y^{n-j}] f(y)^{-n} \quad (12.23a)$$

$$= \frac{(n-1)!}{(j-1)!} \sum_{\substack{k_1, k_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i k_i = n-j}} \binom{-n}{-n - \sum k_i, k_1, k_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{\psi_i}{i+1} \right)^{k_i} \quad (12.23b)$$

$$= \frac{(n-1)!}{(j-1)!} \sum_{\substack{k_1, k_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i k_i = n-j}} (-1)^{\sum k_i} \binom{n + \sum k_i - 1}{n-1, k_1, k_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{\psi_i}{i+1} \right)^{k_i}. \quad (12.23c)$$

In our application we have $\phi_i = e_i$ and hence $\psi_i = (-1)^i h_i$. This gives an explicit formula for the Eulerian symmetric functions:

Proposition 12.10 (Eulerian symmetric functions in terms of complete homogeneous symmetric functions). *We have*

$$\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}) = Y_{n+1,k+1} = \frac{n!}{k!} \sum_{\substack{k_1, k_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i k_i = n-k}} \binom{n + \sum k_i}{n, k_1, k_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{(-1)^{i-1} h_i}{i+1} \right)^{k_i} \quad (12.24a)$$

$$= \frac{1}{k!} \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-k} (-1)^{n-k-\ell(\lambda)} \frac{(n + \ell(\lambda))!}{\prod_i (i+1)^{m_i(\lambda)} m_i(\lambda)!} h_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}). \quad (12.24b)$$

Remarks. 1. To see explicitly that the coefficient in (12.24b) is an integer, write it as

$$\frac{(k + \sum (i+1)m_i)!}{k! \prod_i (i+1)^{m_i} m_i!} = \binom{k + \sum (i+1)m_i}{k, 2m_1, 3m_2, \dots} \prod_i \frac{((i+1)m_i)!}{(i+1)^{m_i} m_i!}. \quad (12.25)$$

2. Computation of $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ for $n \leq 10$ shows that some of the integers a_λ in (12.18) have large prime factors, in contrast to the coefficients in (12.24), which do not. This suggests that there may not exist any simple formula (at least not a multiplicative one) for the a_λ .

3. Inspection of (12.19) shows that our Eulerian symmetric functions $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ are *not* equal (or as far as we can tell, related) to the ‘‘Eulerian quasisymmetric functions’’ (which are in fact symmetric!) defined by Shareshian and Wachs [133, Theorem 1.2], nor to their duals.

4. Our multivariate Eulerian polynomials $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$ are also not equal (or as far as we can tell, related) to the multivariate Eulerian polynomials A_n, \tilde{A}_n, C_n and E_n defined by Haglund and Visontai [77]. Indeed, in the latter polynomials the number of variables \mathbf{x} is proportional to n , while in our polynomials it is a fixed number $m+1$. ■

12.2.2 Extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions: Definitions and statement of results

But we can go much farther, and introduce additional indeterminates. Given an increasing rooted tree T (here it will be $(m+1)$ -ary, but the notion is more general), let us define the **level** of a vertex $j \in T$ to be the number of children of the vertices $1, \dots, j-1$ that are $> j$. More generally, given an unordered forest F consisting of $k+1$ increasing rooted trees, let r_j be the number of trees in F that contain at least one of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$; then define the level of a vertex $j \in F$ to be the number of children of the vertices $1, \dots, j-1$ that are $> j$, plus $k+1-r_j$. (When the forest has only one tree, this definition reduces to the preceding one.)

Now let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_m)$ and $\mathbf{c} = (c_L)_{L \geq 0}$ be indeterminates, and let $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ be the generating polynomial for increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by c_0 . (Since vertex $n+1$ is at level 0, this definition can equivalently be rephrased as saying that each vertex at level L *except for vertex $n+1$* gets a weight c_L , with no final division. In particular we see that $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$ is a polynomial in \mathbf{c} .) Similarly, let $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ be the generating polynomial for unordered forests of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ total vertices with $k+1$ components in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by $c_0 c_1 \cdots c_k$. (We will see later that $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}$ is indeed a polynomial in \mathbf{c} , among other things because it has an m -J-fraction

with coefficients that are polynomials in \mathbf{c} .) And finally, define $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ by

$$\mathcal{P}_0^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = 1 \quad (12.26a)$$

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = c_0 x_0 \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (12.26b)$$

Thus, $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ is the same as $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ but restricted to trees in which the edge (if any) emanating from the root is a 0-edge. Here $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ are homogeneous of degree n in \mathbf{x} and also homogeneous of degree n in \mathbf{c} , while $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ is homogeneous of degree $n-k$ in \mathbf{x} and in \mathbf{c} ; we refer to them collectively as **extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials**. We will prove:

Theorem 12.11 (Branched continued fractions for the extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have:*

(a) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = \widehat{P}_n^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$, which by definition equals $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by the factorized formula (12.7) with period $p = m + 1$.

(b) $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are given by

$$\beta_i^{(\ell)} = \frac{(i+1)!}{(i-\ell)!} c_{i-\ell} c_{i-\ell+1} \cdots c_i e_{\ell+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m). \quad (12.27)$$

(c) $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are again given by (12.27).

As before, we get:

Corollary 12.12 (Hankel-total positivity of the extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequences $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n \geq 0}$ and $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n \geq 0}$ are coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

We will also show:

Lemma 12.13. *The production matrix $P^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ [cf. (7.4)] associated to the weights (12.27) is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

Once again this gives an alternate proof of the Hankel-total positivity of $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n \geq 0}$; and by Theorem 9.15 we get:

Corollary 12.14 (Total positivity of lower-triangular matrix of extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the lower-triangular matrix $(\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

Of course, by specializing Theorem 12.11, Lemma 12.13 and Corollaries 12.12 and 12.14 to $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{1}$, we recover Theorem 12.1, Lemma 12.4 and Corollaries 12.3 and 12.5.

Theorem 12.11(b,c) and Corollaries 12.12 and 12.14 also have obvious extensions to $m = \infty$, which we refrain from stating. But it is worth introducing (with the obvious definition) the **extended Eulerian symmetric functions** $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$: they are symmetric functions of \mathbf{x} with coefficients in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{c}]$. We then have the following generalization of Proposition 12.8:

Proposition 12.15 (Extended Eulerian symmetric functions in terms of elementary symmetric functions). *Let $\mathbf{c} = (c_L)_{L \geq 0}$ be indeterminates; and for each partition λ of n , let $a_\lambda(\mathbf{c})$ be the sum, over all increasing ordered trees on $n+1$ vertices that have degree sequence λ , of the product $\prod_{j=1}^n c_{\text{lev}(j)}$ where $\text{lev}(j)$ is the level of vertex j [note that $j = n+1$ is not included in this product]. Then*

$$\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = \sum_{\lambda \vdash n} a_\lambda(\mathbf{c}) e_\lambda(\mathbf{x}). \quad (12.28)$$

Open Problem 12.16. Find an explicit formula for the $a_\lambda(\mathbf{c})$, and/or for the coefficients $b_\lambda(\mathbf{c})$ in $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = \sum_{\lambda \vdash n} b_\lambda(\mathbf{c}) h_\lambda(\mathbf{x})$.

We are going to give two proofs of Theorems 12.1 and 12.11, by completely different (but complementary) methods. The first proof is by a bijection to labeled lattice paths: this directly yields Theorem 12.11(b,c), from which we deduce Theorem 12.11(a) by applying odd contraction (Proposition 7.6). The second proof is by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method: this directly yields Theorem 12.1(a), from which we deduce Theorem 12.1(b) by applying odd contraction. We have not yet succeeded in generalizing this second proof to handle the case $\mathbf{c} \neq \mathbf{1}$. On the other hand, this second proof extends to handle the period- m case to be discussed in Section 12.3, for which we have been unable to complete the bijective proof.

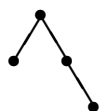
12.2.3 Proof by bijection to labeled lattice paths

We are going to prove Theorem 12.11 by a bijection to labeled lattice paths. This method for proving continued fractions was invented by Flajolet [51] and Viennot [157] and used subsequently by many authors; it can be summarized briefly as follows.²⁵ For each $n \geq 0$, let \mathcal{O}_n be some class of combinatorial objects, whose ordinary generating function (possibly with some weights) we wish to expand as a classical continued fraction. Now let \mathcal{M}_n be the set of Motzkin paths of length n : we write them as $\omega = (\omega_0, \dots, \omega_n)$ with $\omega_j = (j, h_j)$; the steps are $s_j = h_j - h_{j-1} \in \{-1, 0, 1\}$. For each $s \in \{-1, 0, 1\}$ and each $h \geq 0$, let $L(s, h)$ be a finite (possibly empty) set of “allowed labels” for a step of type s starting at height h ; we write $\mathbf{L} = (L(s, h))_{s \in \{-1, 0, 1\}, h \geq 0}$. Then an \mathbf{L} -labeled Motzkin path of length n is a pair (ω, ξ) where $\omega \in \mathcal{M}_n$ and $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n)$ is a set of labels satisfying $\xi_j \in L(s_j, h_{j-1})$ for $1 \leq j \leq n$; we write $\mathcal{M}_n^{\mathbf{L}}$ for the set of \mathbf{L} -labeled Motzkin paths of length n . If we can find a bijection from \mathcal{O}_n to $\mathcal{M}_n^{\mathbf{L}}$, then enumerating \mathcal{O}_n is equivalent to enumerating Motzkin paths of length n with a weight $|L(s, h)|$ for each step of type s starting at height h . And by Flajolet’s [51] correspondence of weighted Motzkin paths with J-fractions, this

²⁵See also [143] for a more detailed summary. What we here call a “labeled Motzkin path” is (up to small changes in notation) called a “path diagramme” by Flajolet [51, p. 136] and a “history” by Viennot [157, p. II-9]. Our set \mathbf{L} of allowed labels is essentially what Flajolet [51, p. 136] calls a “possibility function”.

means that the ordinary generating function $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} |\mathcal{O}_n| t^n$ is given by a J-fraction with coefficients $\gamma_h = |L(0, h)|$ and $\beta_h = |L(1, h-1)| |L(-1, h)|$. Moreover, if the elements of \mathcal{O}_n carry weights that, under the bijection, correspond to a product of weights for each step that moreover depend only on the step's type s_j , its starting height h_{j-1} and its label ξ_j , then the weighted ordinary generating function is also given by a J-fraction. Similar considerations apply for mappings to other classes of labeled lattice paths: for instance, a mapping to labeled Dyck paths of length $2n$ gives rise to an S-fraction (2.9), and more generally a mapping to labeled m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)n$ gives rise to an m -S-fraction (2.28).

Now, in Section 10.3 we gave a combinatorial proof of Proposition 10.7 by constructing a bijection from $(m+1)$ -ary trees on n vertices to m -Dyck paths of length $(m+1)n$. It would be natural to try to prove Theorem 12.11(a) by constructing a bijection from *increasing* $(m+1)$ -ary trees on n vertices to some set of suitably *labeled* m -Dyck paths (ω, ξ) ; and it would moreover be natural to define the path ω by re-using the same bijection that we have already devised (using the tree without looking at its labels), and then to define the labels ξ by using in some way the labels on the tree. But it turns out that this approach cannot work, not even for $m=1$. Indeed, consider *any* bijection from binary trees on n vertices to Dyck paths of length $2n$ (not necessarily the one constructed in Section 10.3); and consider the binary tree



on 4 vertices (the root is at the top). This tree has 3 increasing labelings: the root must be labeled 1, and then the left child of the root can be labeled 2, 3 or 4. But no matter how we map this tree to a Dyck path of length 8, that path can reach height at most 4. And the label sets $L(\pm 1, h)$ for $0 \leq h \leq 4$ must satisfy $|L(1, h-1)| |L(-1, h)| = \alpha_h$ where $(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_3, \alpha_4) = (1, 1, 2, 2)$ from Euler's continued fraction (1.2) for $n!$. But this means that each $|L(\pm 1, h)|$ must be 1 or 2, so it is impossible for the Dyck path associated to this tree to have 3 possible labelings. So the approach of defining the Dyck path by looking only at the underlying unlabeled tree cannot work.

The next-best thing would be to find a bijection from increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on n vertices to some set of suitably labeled m -Dyck paths (ω, ξ) , where not only ξ but also ω would depend on the tree's labels. We have not yet succeeded in doing this, and we leave it as an open problem to find such a bijection (which would moreover have to map the statistics in such a way as to prove Theorem 12.11(a) or at least Theorem 12.1(a)). Instead, we will prove Theorem 12.11 by constructing a bijection from increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices to a set of labeled reversed m -Łukasiewicz paths of length n . (A reversed m -Łukasiewicz path is a path in $\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{N}$ that uses steps $(1, r)$ with $-1 \leq r \leq m$.) This will show that the corresponding ordinary generating function is given by an m -J-fraction, namely, the one asserted in Theorem 12.11(b). We will then observe that the weights occurring in this m -J-fraction are actually those arising from the odd contraction (7.11) of an m -S-fraction, namely, the one asserted in Theorem 12.11(a).

By generalizing the bijection from trees to forests we will also prove Theorem 12.11(c).

But there is a slight twist: the bijection works most naturally for *ordered* forests of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees, not unordered ones. As mentioned earlier, the generating polynomial for ordered forests — let us call it $\tilde{\mathcal{Q}}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ — is simply $(k+1)!$ times the generating polynomial $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ for unordered forests. So we will show that $\tilde{\mathcal{Q}}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ is $(k+1)!$ times the generalized m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomial $J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta})$; this will immediately prove the desired result for $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$.

PROOF OF THEOREM 12.11. We will construct a bijection from the set of ordered forests of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on the vertex set $[n+1]$ with $k+1$ components to the set of \mathbf{L} -labeled reversed partial m -Łukasiewicz paths from $(0, k)$ to $(n, 0)$, where the label sets \mathbf{L} will be defined below.²⁶

Given an ordered forest F of increasing $(m+1)$ -ary trees on the vertex set $[n+1]$ with $k+1$ components, we define a labeled reversed partial m -Łukasiewicz path (ω, ξ) of length n as follows (see Figure 18 for an example):

Definition of the path ω . The path ω starts at height $h_0 = k$ and takes steps s_1, \dots, s_n with $s_i = \deg(i) - 1$, where $\deg(i)$ is the number of children of vertex i (we don't take any step s_{n+1}); we have $-1 \leq s_i \leq m$ since $0 \leq \deg(i) \leq m+1$.²⁷ Recall that r_j is the number of trees in F that contain at least one of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$. We then claim:

Lemma 12.17. *For $1 \leq j \leq n$, the height $h_j = k + \sum_{i=1}^j s_i$ has the following interpretations:*

- (a) h_j is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r_j$.
- (b) h_{j-1} is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j-1\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k + 1 - r_j$.

In particular, $h_j > k - r_j$ whenever j is not the highest-numbered vertex of its tree, and $h_j \geq k - r_j$ always; and h_{j-1} is the level of the vertex j as we have defined it.

PROOF. By induction on j . For the base case $j = 1$, the claims are clear since $r_1 = 1$, $h_0 = k$ and $h_1 = k + \deg(1) - 1$.

²⁶When restricted to trees ($k = 0$), our bijection generalizes the one described by Flajolet [51, p. 143] (following Françon [59]) for the case $m = 1$ (increasing binary trees). Also, after completing this proof we discovered that essentially the same construction is contained (for general m , though only for trees) in a very interesting unpublished paper of Kuba and Varvak [93]. Indeed, Kuba and Varvak use somewhat more general weights than we do — encoding the complete “local type” of children at each vertex — because they are not concerned with total positivity.

²⁷We remark that this definition of the path ω is identical to what was done in Section 6 for unlabeled trees, except that here we use the given labeling of the vertices rather than the depth-first-search labeling. The proof of the interpretation of the height h_j given in Section 6 is simply a specialization of the one given in Lemma 12.17 below. However, with the depth-first-search labeling we always finish processing one tree before moving on to the next, while that is *not* in general the case here.

For $j > 1$, vertex j is either the child of another node, or the root of a tree. We consider these two cases separately:

(i) Suppose that j is the child of another node (obviously numbered $\leq j - 1$). By the inductive hypothesis (a), h_{j-1} is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j - 1\}$ whose labels are $\geq j$, plus $k - r_{j-1}$; since one of these children is j , it follows that $h_{j-1} - 1$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j - 1\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r_{j-1}$. Now vertex j has $\deg(j)$ children, all of which have labels $> j$; so $h_j = h_{j-1} + s_j = h_{j-1} - 1 + \deg(j)$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r_{j-1}$. Since $r_j = r_{j-1}$, the preceding two sentences prove claims (b) and (a), respectively.

(ii) Suppose that j is a root. By the inductive hypothesis (a), h_{j-1} is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j - 1\}$ whose labels are $\geq j$, plus $k - r_{j-1}$; since j is not one of these children, h_{j-1} is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j - 1\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r_{j-1}$. Now all of the children of vertex j have labels $> j$, so $h_j = h_{j-1} + \deg(j) - 1$ is the number of children of the vertices $\{1, \dots, j\}$ whose labels are $> j$, plus $k - r_{j-1} - 1$. Since $r_j = r_{j-1} + 1$, the preceding two sentences prove claims (b) and (a), respectively. \square

It follows from Lemma 12.17 that $h_1, \dots, h_{n-1} \geq 0$ and $h_n = 0$. So the path ω is indeed a reversed partial m -Łukasiewicz path from $(0, k)$ to $(n, 0)$.

Definition of the labels ξ . The label ξ_j will be an ordered pair $\xi_j = (\xi'_j, \xi''_j)$ where ξ'_j is a positive integer and ξ''_j is a subset of $\{0, \dots, m\}$; more precisely, the label set $L(s, h)$ for a step s starting at height h will be

$$L(s, h) = [h + 1] \times \binom{\{0, \dots, m\}}{s + 1} \quad (12.29)$$

where $\binom{S}{r}$ denotes the set of subsets of S of cardinality r . The label ξ'_j is defined as 1 plus the number of vertices $> j$ that are either children of $\{1, \dots, j - 1\}$ or roots and that precede j in the depth-first-search order.²⁸ The label ξ''_j is the set of $i \in \{0, \dots, m\}$ for which j has an i -child.

The inverse bijection. We claim that this mapping $F \mapsto (\omega, \xi)$ is a bijection from the set of ordered forests of increasing $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on the vertex set $[n + 1]$ with $k + 1$ components to the set of \mathbf{L} -labeled reversed partial m -Łukasiewicz paths from $(0, k)$ to $(n, 0)$. To prove this, we explain the inverse mapping.

Given a labeled reversed partial m -Łukasiewicz path (ω, ξ) , we build up the ordered forest F vertex-by-vertex: at stage j we will have an ordered forest F_j in which some of the vertices are labelled $1, \dots, j$ and some others are unnumbered “vacant slots”. The starting forest F_0 has $k + 1$ singleton components, each of which is a vacant slot (these components are of course ordered). We now “read” the path step-by-step, from $j = 1$ through $j = n$. When we read a step s_j with labels (ξ'_j, ξ''_j) , we insert a new vertex j into one of the vacant slots of F_{j-1} , namely, the ξ'_j th vacant

²⁸Here the depth-first-search order could be replaced by any chosen order on the vertices of F that commutes with truncation. The key property we need is that the order on the truncated forest F_{j-1} to be defined below is the restriction of the order on the full forest F .

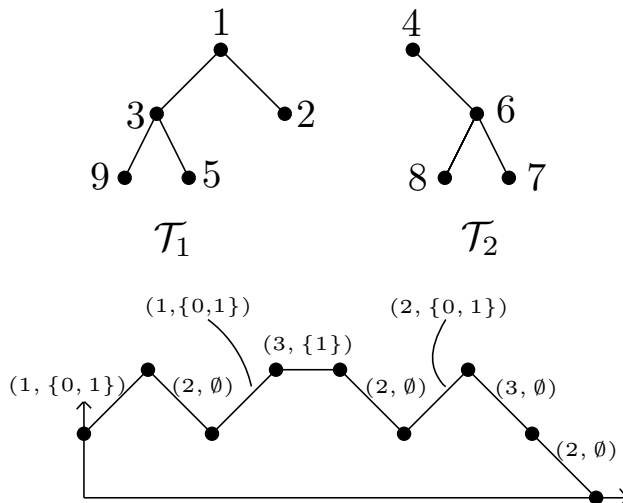


Figure 18. (a) An ordered forest $(\mathcal{T}_1, \mathcal{T}_2)$ of increasing binary trees on 9 total vertices. (b) Its corresponding labelled reversed partial 1-Lukasiewicz path from $(0, 1)$ to $(8, 0)$.

slot in the depth-first-search order of F_{j-1} . We also create new vacant slots that are children of j : namely, a vacant i -child for each $i \in \xi_j''$. This defines F_j . After stage n , the forest F_n has only one vacant slot: we insert vertex $n + 1$ into this slot, thereby defining the ordered forest F .

It is fairly clear that this insertion algorithm defines a map $(\omega, \xi) \mapsto F$ that is indeed the inverse of the mapping $F \mapsto (\omega, \xi)$ defined previously.

Now recall that we want to enumerate ordered forests of increasing $(m + 1)$ -ary trees on the vertex set $[n + 1]$ with $k + 1$ components in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L (divided by $c_0 \cdots c_k$). We use the bijection to push these weights from the forests to the labeled reversed partial m -Lukasiewicz paths. Given a forest F , each vertex $j \in [n + 1]$ contributes a weight $c_{\text{lev}(j)}$ [where $\text{lev}(j)$ is its level] and also a weight x_i for each i -child. Under the bijection, this vertex (if $j \leq n$) is mapped to a step $s_j = \text{deg}(j) - 1$ from height $h_{j-1} = \text{lev}(j)$ to height $h_j = h_{j-1} + s_j$. Therefore, the weight in the labeled path (ω, ξ) corresponding to this vertex is $c_{h_{j-1}} \prod_{i \in \xi_j''} x_i$, and the weight of the labeled path

(ω, ξ) [before division by $c_0 \cdots c_k$] is the product of these weights over $1 \leq j \leq n$, times the weight c_0 corresponding to the vertex $n + 1$.

Now we sum over the labels ξ to get the total weight for each path ω . Summing over ξ_j' gives a factor $h_{j-1} + 1$. Summing over ξ_j'' gives a weight $e_r(x_0, \dots, x_m)$ when vertex j has $r (= s_j + 1)$ children. Putting everything together, the weight in the reversed partial m -Lukasiewicz path for a step s ($-1 \leq s \leq m$) starting from height h will be

$$W(s, h) = (h + 1) c_h e_{s+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m). \quad (12.30)$$

We now want to read this path backwards (so that it becomes an ordinary partial

m -Lukasiewicz path in our definition); then a step s starting at height h becomes a step $s' = -s$ starting at height $h' = h + s$. Therefore, in the ordinary partial m -Lukasiewicz path, the weight will be

$$W'(s', h') = (h' + s' + 1) c_{h'+s'} e_{1-s'}(x_0, \dots, x_m). \quad (12.31)$$

Finally, in the partial m -Lukasiewicz path we can associate to each ℓ -fall from height h' the corresponding rises from $h' - \ell \rightarrow h' - \ell + 1 \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow h'$; and in addition there are rises $0 \rightarrow 1 \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow k$ (exactly one of each type) that do not correspond to falls. By our convention for m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials (which gives weight 1 to rises), we must attribute the weights (12.31) for the rises $h' - \ell \rightarrow h' - \ell + 1 \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow h'$ to the corresponding ℓ -fall. The resulting weight for an ℓ -fall from height i is thus

$$\beta_i^{(\ell)} = W'(1, i - \ell) W'(1, i - \ell + 1) \cdots W'(1, i - 1) \times W(-\ell, i) \quad (12.32a)$$

$$= (i - \ell + 2)c_{i-\ell+1} (i - \ell + 3)c_{i-\ell+2} \cdots (i + 1)c_i \\ \times (i - \ell + 1)c_{i-\ell} e_{\ell+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m), \quad (12.32b)$$

which is exactly (12.27). Furthermore, the weight for the rises $0 \rightarrow 1 \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow k$ that do not correspond to falls is

$$W'(1, 0) W'(1, 1) \cdots W'(1, k - 1) = 2c_1 3c_2 \cdots (k + 1)c_k = (k + 1)! c_1 \cdots c_k. \quad (12.33)$$

And finally, let us not forget the weight c_0 for the vertex $n + 1$. But now we recall that $\tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ was defined as the weighted sum over ordered forests *divided by* $c_0 \cdots c_k$. Therefore, we get

$$\tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = (k + 1)! J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}). \quad (12.34)$$

Since $\tilde{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = (k + 1)! Q_{n,k}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$, Theorem 12.11(c) follows. And Theorem 12.11(b) is the special case $k = 0$.

On the other hand, Lemma 12.18 below with $b_k = (k + 1)c_k$ shows that these $\boldsymbol{\beta}$ are precisely those arising by odd contraction (7.11) from the m -S-fraction specialized to the factorized weights (12.7) with $p = m + 1$. Then Proposition 7.6 tells us that $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = \alpha_m J_{n-1}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}) = c_0 x_0 \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = \mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$. This proves Theorem 12.11(a). \square

Lemma 12.18. *Consider the production matrix $P^{(m)} = (p_{i,j}^{(m)})_{i,j \geq 0}$ defined by (7.11) with $\alpha_{m+j+(m+1)k} = b_k x_j$ for $0 \leq j \leq m$ and $k \geq 0$:*

$$P^{(m)} = U^*(b_0 x_0, b_1 x_0, b_2 x_0, \dots) L(b_0 x_1, b_1 x_1, b_2 x_1, \dots) \cdots L(b_0 x_m, b_1 x_m, b_2 x_m, \dots). \quad (12.35)$$

Then

$$p_{i,j}^{(m)} = b_j b_{j+1} \cdots b_i e_{i-j+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m) \quad (12.36)$$

where of course $e_{i-j+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m) = 0$ whenever $j < i - m$ or $j > i + 1$.

PROOF. By induction on m . If $m = 0$, then

$$p_{i,j}^{(0)} = U^*(b_0x_0, b_1x_0, \dots) = \begin{cases} b_ix_0 = b_ie_1(x_0) & \text{if } j = i \\ 1 = e_0(x_0) & \text{if } j = i + 1 \\ 0 & \text{otherwise} \end{cases} \quad (12.37)$$

as claimed. For $m > 0$, we have by definition $P^{(m)} = P^{(m-1)}L(b_0x_m, b_1x_m, \dots)$ and hence

$$p_{i,j}^{(m)} = p_{i,j}^{(m-1)} + b_jx_m p_{i,j+1}^{(m-1)}. \quad (12.38a)$$

$$= b_j b_{j+1} \cdots b_i e_{i-j+1}(x_0, \dots, x_{m-1}) + b_j x_m b_{j+1} \cdots b_i e_{i-j}(x_0, \dots, x_{m-1}) \quad (12.38b)$$

$$= b_j b_{j+1} \cdots b_i e_{i-j+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m) \quad (12.38c)$$

where the second line used the inductive hypothesis. \square

Finally, let us prove Lemma 12.13 (and hence also Lemma 12.4):

PROOF OF LEMMA 12.13. The production matrix $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ associated to the weights (12.27) has matrix elements

$$p_{ij} = \beta_i^{(i-j)} = \widehat{c}_j \widehat{c}_{j+1} \cdots \widehat{c}_i e_{i-j+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m) \quad (12.39)$$

where $\widehat{c}_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (k+1)c_k$; therefore it can be written as $P(\boldsymbol{\beta}) = DTD'$ where $D = \text{diag}(\widehat{c}_0, \widehat{c}_0\widehat{c}_1, \widehat{c}_0\widehat{c}_1\widehat{c}_2, \dots)$, $D' = \text{diag}(1, 1/\widehat{c}_0, 1/(\widehat{c}_0\widehat{c}_1), \dots)$, and T is the unit-lower-Hessenberg Toeplitz matrix $(e_{i-j+1}(\mathbf{x}))_{i,j \geq 0}$. (Here we are working temporarily in the ring $\mathbb{Q}[\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}, \mathbf{c}^{-1}]$, although in the end everything will lie in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}]$.) By the Jacobi–Trudi formula [149, Corollary 7.16.2], all the minors of T are skew Schur functions and hence monomial-positive (in \mathbf{x}); it follows that $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is coefficientwise totally positive (in \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c}). \square

Remark. Since the skew Schur functions are nonnegative linear combinations of Schur functions [149, Corollary 7.15.9], this proof shows that in fact $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ is totally positive with respect to the Schur order on the ring of symmetric functions, which is stronger than the coefficientwise (= monomial) order.²⁹ Theorem 9.14 then implies that the sequence $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}))_{n \geq 0}$ is Hankel-totally positive with respect to the Schur order (coefficientwise in \mathbf{c}); and Theorem 9.15 implies that the lower-triangular matrix $(\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ is totally positive with respect to the Schur order (coefficientwise in \mathbf{c}). \blacksquare

²⁹*A priori* the foregoing proof shows only that the minors of $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ are linear combinations of Schur functions with nonnegative *rational* coefficients (more precisely, coefficients in $\mathbb{Q}_+[\mathbf{c}]$). But it is an immediate consequence of (12.39) that the minors of $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ are *integer* linear combinations of the e_λ (more precisely, linear combinations with coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{c}]$), and hence also of the m_λ ; and the transition matrix from m_λ to s_λ is integer-valued [149, pp. 315–316]. So the minors of $P(\boldsymbol{\beta})$ are linear combinations of Schur functions with nonnegative *integer* coefficients (more precisely, coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}_+[\mathbf{c}]$).

12.2.4 Proof by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method

We would now like to give a second proof of Theorem 12.1(a,b), based on the Euler–Gauss recurrence method for proving continued fractions, generalized to m -S-fractions as in Proposition 2.3. This proof gives additional information not provided by the bijective proof: namely, recurrences (and when $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, semi-explicit formulae) for the quantities $g_k = f_0 f_1 \cdots f_k$.

Let us recall briefly the method: if $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ are formal power series with constant term 1 (with coefficients in some commutative ring R) satisfying a recurrence

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \alpha_{k+m} t g_{k+m}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (12.40)$$

for some coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ in R , then $g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) t^n$ and more generally $g_k(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_{n|k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) t^n$.

Here we will apply this method with the choice $g_{-1}(t) = 1$. (By contrast, the application of this method to ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series, to be given in Sections 13–15 below, will use in general $g_{-1}(t) \neq 1$.) Here the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are the Eulerian-quasi-affine weights (12.5) with period $p = m + 1$, i.e.

$$\alpha_k = \lfloor (k+1)/(m+1) \rfloor x_{k+1 \bmod m+1}. \quad (12.41)$$

We need to find series $(g_k(t))_{k \geq 0}$ with constant term 1 satisfying (12.40). Let us write $g_k(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} g_{k,n} t^n$ and define $g_{k,n} = 0$ for $n < 0$. Then (12.40) can be written as

$$g_{k,n} - g_{k-1,n} = \alpha_{k+m} g_{k+m,n-1} \quad \text{for } k, n \geq 0. \quad (12.42)$$

Here are the required $g_{k,n}$:

Proposition 12.19 (Euler–Gauss recurrence for multivariate Eulerian polynomials). *Let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_m)$ be indeterminates; we work in the ring $R = \mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{x}]$. Set $g_{k,n} = \delta_{n0}$ for $k < 0$, and then define $g_{k,n}$ for $k, n \geq 0$ by the recurrence*

$$g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+i} \right) g_{k,n-1} + g_{k-m,n} \quad (12.43)$$

where $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (12.41) and \mathcal{D}_m is given by (12.17). Then:

- (a) $g_{k,0} = 1$ for all $k \in \mathbb{Z}$.
- (b) $(g_{k,n})$ satisfies the recurrence (12.42).
- (c) $(g_{k,n})$ also satisfies the recurrence

$$g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=0}^m \alpha_{k+i} \right) g_{k,n-1} + g_{k-m-1,n} \quad \text{for } k, n \geq 0. \quad (12.44)$$

- (d) For $0 \leq k \leq m$, we have $g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=0}^k x_i \right)^n 1$.

Therefore $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = g_{0,n} = (\mathcal{D}_m + x_0)^n 1$, and more generally $S_{n|k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = g_{k,n}$.

Here (12.43) is, for each $k \geq 0$, a recurrence in n for $g_{k,n}$, with $g_{k-m,n}$ being considered known; it should therefore be interpreted as an outer recurrence on k together with an inner recurrence on n . Note also that we are using (12.41) also to define $\alpha_i = 0$ for $-1 \leq i \leq m-1$. This implies that (12.42) holds also for $-(m+1) \leq k \leq -1$.

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 12.19. (a) We see trivially using (12.43) that $g_{k,0} = 1$ for all $k \in \mathbb{Z}$, i.e. $g_k(t)$ has constant term 1.

(b) We will now prove that (12.42) holds. The proof will be by an outer induction on k and an inner induction on n . The base cases $k = -m, \dots, -1$ hold trivially because $g_{k,n} = g_{k-1,n} = \delta_{n0}$ and $\alpha_0, \dots, \alpha_{m-1} = 0$. Now suppose that (12.42) holds for a given k and all $n \geq 0$; we want to prove it when k is replaced by $k+m$, i.e. that

$$g_{k+m,n} - g_{k+m-1,n} - \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-1} = 0 \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0. \quad (12.45)$$

We will prove (12.45) by induction on n . It holds for $n = 0$ because $g_{k+m,0} = g_{k+m-1,0} = 1$ and $g_{k+2m,-1} = 0$. If $n > 0$, then we use (12.43) on each of the three terms on the left-hand side of (12.45), giving

$$g_{k+m,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m+i} \right) g_{k+m,n-1} + g_{k,n} \quad (12.46a)$$

$$g_{k+m-1,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m-1+i} \right) g_{k+m-1,n-1} + g_{k-1,n} \quad (12.46b)$$

$$\alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-1} = \alpha_{k+2m} \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+2m+i} \right) g_{k+2m,n-2} + \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+m,n-1} \quad (12.46c)$$

Using $\alpha_{j+m+1} = \alpha_j + x_{j+1 \bmod m+1}$, and using the fact that \mathcal{D}_m is a pure first-order differential operator and hence satisfies the Leibniz rule, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{LHS of (12.45)} &= \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m-1+i} \right) (g_{k+m,n-1} - g_{k+m-1,n-1} - \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-2}) \\ &\quad + g_{k+2m,n-2} (\mathcal{D}_m \alpha_{k+2m}) \\ &\quad + (g_{k,n} - g_{k-1,n} - \alpha_{k+m} g_{k+m,n-1}) \\ &\quad + (\alpha_{k+2m} - \alpha_{k+m}) (g_{k+m,n-1} - g_{k+m,n-1}) \\ &\quad - \alpha_{k+2m} \left(\sum_{i=1}^m x_{k+m+i \bmod m+1} \right) g_{k+2m,n-2}. \end{aligned} \quad (12.47)$$

The first term vanishes by the hypothesis of the inner induction on n ; the third term vanishes by the hypothesis of the outer induction on k ; and the fourth term vanishes.

On the other hand, from (12.41) and the definition of \mathcal{D}_m we have

$$\mathcal{D}^m \alpha_{k+2m} = \lfloor (k+2m+1)/(m+1) \rfloor \mathcal{D}_m x_{k-1 \bmod m+1} \quad (12.48a)$$

$$= \lfloor (k+2m+1)/(m+1) \rfloor x_{k-1 \bmod m+1} \left(\sum_{i=0}^m x_i - x_{k-1 \bmod m+1} \right) \quad (12.48b)$$

$$= \alpha_{k+2m} \left(\sum_{i=0}^m x_i - x_{k-1 \bmod m+1} \right), \quad (12.48c)$$

so the second term in (12.47) cancels the fifth term. This completes the proof of (12.42).

(c) Using (12.42) with $k \rightarrow k-m$ (which is valid as noted above since $k-m \geq -m \geq -(m+1)$), we get $g_{k-m,n} = g_{k-m-1,n} + \alpha_k g_{k,n-1}$. Substituting this on the right-hand side of (12.43) gives (12.44).

(d) For $0 \leq k \leq m$, the term $g_{k-m-1,n}$ on the right-hand side of (12.44) is simply δ_{n0} , and $\sum_{i=0}^m \alpha_{k+i} = \sum_{i=0}^k x_i$. So (d) is an immediate consequence. \square

Remark. When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, we can use

$$\mathcal{D}_m \prod_{i=0}^m x_i^{n_i} \Big|_{\mathbf{x}=\mathbf{1}} = m \sum_{i=0}^m n_i \quad (12.49)$$

together with the fact that $g_{k,n-1}$ is homogeneous in \mathbf{x} of degree $n-1$, to specialize (12.44) as

$$g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1}) = [m(n-1) + k + 1] g_{k,n-1}(\mathbf{1}) + g_{k-m-1,n}(\mathbf{1}). \quad (12.50)$$

It follows that for $0 \leq k \leq m$, the $g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1})$ are shifted multifactorials:

$$g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1}) = \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (k+1+jm) = C_n(k+1, m). \quad (12.51)$$

However, for $k > m$ the forms get more complicated: $g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1})$ is a linear combination of $\lfloor (k+1)/(m+1) \rfloor + 1$ shifted multifactorials. These can be computed by symbolic algebra for any given m and k : for instance, for $m = 2$ the first few are

$$g_{0,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (2n-1)!! = C_n(1, 2) \quad (12.52a)$$

$$g_{1,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (2n)!! = C_n(2, 2) \quad (12.52b)$$

$$g_{2,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (2n+1)!! = C_n(3, 2) \quad (12.52c)$$

$$g_{3,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -(2n+1)!! + (2n+2)!! = -C_n(3, 2) + 2C_n(4, 2) \quad (12.52d)$$

$$g_{4,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -(2n+2)!! + (2n+3)!! = -2C_n(4, 2) + 3C_n(5, 2) \quad (12.52e)$$

$$g_{5,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -(2n+3)!! + \frac{(2n+4)!!}{2} = -3C_n(5, 2) + 4C_n(6, 2) \quad (12.52f)$$

But we have not been able to find a general expression for the coefficients in these sums. \blacksquare

We have thus shown that $P^{(m,m+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m + x_0)^n 1$. To complete the proof of Theorem 12.1(a) we need to show that $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m + x_0)^n 1$, as asserted in Proposition 12.6.

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 12.6. We will treat the cases of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$ in parallel, and write A_n as a shorthand for either one.

Consider vertex $n + 1$ in an increasing $(m + 1)$ -ary tree on $n + 1$ vertices: it is necessarily a j -child for some $j \in \{0, \dots, m\}$ of some vertex $v \in [n]$. Follow the path from v upwards towards the root until the first i -edge with $i \neq j$ is reached (if one exists).

There are therefore two possibilities (see Figure 19 for an illustration):

- (i) No such edge exists: the path from v to the root consists entirely of j -edges. (This includes the case in which v is itself the root.) In the case of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$ this entails $j = 0$.
- (ii) Such an edge exists; call it e .

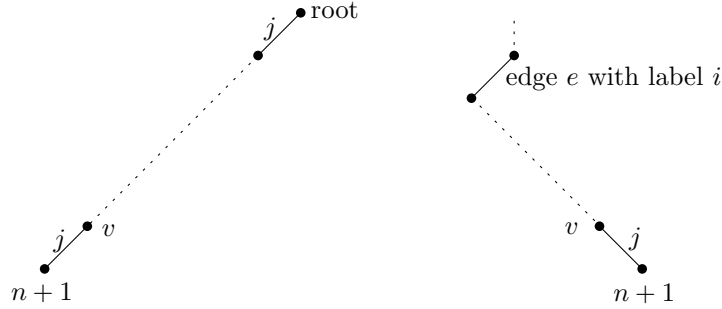


Figure 19. The two possibilities for the vertex $n + 1$.

And conversely, an increasing $(m + 1)$ -ary tree on $n + 1$ vertices is obtained from an increasing $(m + 1)$ -ary tree on n vertices by inserting vertex $n + 1$ in one of these two ways: either we choose a label j , follow the path of j -edges (if any) downwards from the root until there are no more j -edges, and then attach vertex $n + 1$ via a new j -edge; or else we choose an edge e (say that it is an i -edge), choose a label $j \neq i$, follow the path of j -edges (if any) downwards from the bottom end of e until there are no more j -edges, and then attach vertex $n + 1$ via a new j -edge.

Possibility (i) gives weight $x_0 A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$, or $\left(\sum_{j=0}^m x_j\right) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$. Possibility (ii) gives weight $\mathcal{D}_m A_{n-1}$. Adding these together gives $A_n = (\mathcal{D}_m + x_0) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}$, and $A_n = \left(\mathcal{D}_m + \sum_{j=0}^m x_j\right) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$.

$\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}$ is handled similarly to $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}$, with two small differences: in possibility (i) there are $k + 1$ different roots from which we could follow the path of j -edges downwards to attach vertex $n + 1$; or $n + 1$ could be made a new isolated vertex. \square

Finally, Theorem 12.1(b) follows from Theorem 12.1(a) by odd contraction, exactly as in Section 12.2.3.

12.3 Period m : Increasing multi- m -ary trees

In Section 10.3 we also defined the concept of a multi- r -ary tree. We now define labeled multi- r -ary trees and increasing multi- r -ary trees in the obvious way.

It is known [18, p. 30, Corollary 1(iv)] that the number of increasing multi-unary trees on $n + 1$ vertices is $(2n - 1)!!$; more generally, by using (12.21) with $\phi(w) = 1/(1 - w)^r$, it is easy to see that the number of increasing multi- r -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices is the shifted multifactorial $\prod_{j=0}^{n-1} [r + j(r + 1)]$. We would now like to generalize this enumeration to a multivariate polynomial.

12.3.1 Multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type: Definitions and statement of results

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$ be indeterminates. Let $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ be the generating polynomial for increasing multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i ; let $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ be the generating polynomial for unordered forests of increasing multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ total vertices with $k + 1$ components in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i ; and let $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ be the generating polynomial for increasing multi- m -ary trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which all edges emanating from the root are 0-edges and each i -edge gets a weight x_i . Both $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ are homogeneous polynomials of degree n , while $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is homogeneous of degree $n - k$; we refer to them collectively as ***multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type***. When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$ we have $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m+1)}$ [see below after (12.61)] and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{1}) = \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} [m + j(m + 1)]$.

We will prove:

Theorem 12.20 (Branched continued fractions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have:*

(a) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = P_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$, which by definition equals $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by the Eulerian-quasi-affine formula (12.5) with period $p = m$.

(b) $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ are given by

$$\beta_i^{(\ell)} = \frac{(i + 1)!}{(i - \ell)!} h_{\ell+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m). \quad (12.53)$$

(c) $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ are given by (12.53).

(d) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{j=1}^n j! x_0^j J_{n-1,j-1}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ for $n \geq 1$, where $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ is given by (12.53).

We will prove Theorem 12.20(b,c,d) by a small modification of our bijective proof of Theorems 12.1 and 12.11 given in Section 12.2.3. However, we are unable at present to use this method to prove part (a): the trouble is that here the relation between

$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is nontrivial [see (12.59) below], in contrast to the relation (12.12b) between $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}(\mathbf{x})$, which corresponds precisely to odd contraction. So we will instead prove Theorem 12.20(a) by a small modification of the Euler–Gauss recurrence proof given in Section 12.2.4.

For the special case $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, we have:

Corollary 12.21 (Eulerian-quasi-affine m -S-fraction of period m for multifactorials).
For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have $P_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m+1)}$.

Theorem 12.20(a) also implies that the polynomials $P_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ are symmetric in x_1, \dots, x_{m-1} (though not also in x_0) — a fact that seems far from obvious from the branched continued fraction or from the m -Dyck-path definition.

From Theorems 12.20(a) and 9.8 we deduce:

Corollary 12.22 (Hankel-total positivity of $\mathcal{P}^{(m)-}$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-})_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} .*

We will also show:

Lemma 12.23. *The production matrix $P(\beta')$ [cf. (7.4)] associated to the weights (12.53) is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} .*

Please note that in the present case the production matrix $P(\beta)$ is a full lower-Hessenberg matrix — not $(m, 1)$ -banded as in the case of positive type — since the complete homogeneous symmetric functions $h_n(x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$ are nonvanishing for all n .

Theorems 9.14 and 9.15 then imply:

Corollary 12.24 (Hankel-total positivity of $\mathcal{Q}^{(m)-}$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-})_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} .*

Corollary 12.25 (Total positivity of lower-triangular matrix $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the lower-triangular matrix $(\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates x_0, \dots, x_{m-1} .*

We also have explicit expressions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}$, and a recurrence for $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}$, given by repeated application of a first-order linear differential operator:

Proposition 12.26 (Differential expressions for the multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have*

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m^- + x_0)^n 1 \tag{12.54}$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \right)^n 1 \tag{12.55}$$

$$\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + (k+1) \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \right) \mathcal{Q}_{n-1,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) + \mathcal{Q}_{n-1,k-1}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) + \delta_{n0} \delta_{k0} \tag{12.56}$$

where

$$\mathcal{D}_m^- = \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} \left(x_i^2 + x_i \sum_{j=0}^{m-1} x_j \right) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}. \quad (12.57)$$

Remarks. 1. \mathcal{D}_m [cf. (12.17)] and \mathcal{D}_m^- can be given a unified definition as

$$\mathcal{D}_m^\pm = \sum_{i=0}^{p-1} \left(\sum_{j=0}^{p-1} x_j \mp x_i \right) x_i \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} \quad (12.58)$$

where $p = m + 1$ or m , respectively.

2. For $m = 1$ we have trivially $P_n^{(1)-}(x) = (2n - 1)!! x^n$; the S-fraction for this case is due to Euler [48, section 29]. For $m = 2$, the triangular array of coefficients corresponding to $P_n^{(2)-}(x, y)$ is not currently in [110]. ■

We can again pass to the limit $m \rightarrow \infty$ in the obvious way, defining generating formal power series $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$, $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ for increasing multi- ∞ -ary trees. Here $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ are symmetric functions in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} , while $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is a symmetric function of $(x_i)_{i \geq 1}$ with coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}[x_0]$; they are homogeneous of degree n or $n - k$. We refer to $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ as the **Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type**. Theorem 12.20(b,c,d) Corollaries 12.22–12.25 and Proposition 12.26 have obvious counterparts at $m = \infty$, which we refrain from stating.

We can say more about the Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type by using the interpretation of multi- ∞ -ary trees as ordered trees in which each edge carries a label $i \in \mathbb{N}$ and the edges emanating outwards from each vertex consist, in order, of zero or more edges labeled 0, then zero or more edges labeled 1, etc. (Section 10.3). Since the choice of labels on the edges emanating outwards from a vertex v can be made independently for each v , the definition of $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}$ can be rephrased as: $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating formal power series for increasing ordered trees on $n+1$ vertices in which each vertex with i children gets a weight $h_i(\mathbf{x})$, where h_i is the complete homogeneous symmetric function; and an analogous rephrasing holds for $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}$. It follows that the Eulerian symmetric functions of positive and negative type are simply the duals of each other: $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-} = \omega \mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-} = \omega \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$, where ω is the involution of the ring of symmetric functions defined by $\omega h_i = e_i$. Therefore, the formulae (12.18), (12.19) and (12.24) for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)}$ imply dual formulae for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}$, in which e and h are interchanged.

We can also be explicit about $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}$. Starting from the definition of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}$ and classifying the trees by the sizes of the subtrees of the root, we see immediately that

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{\ell=0}^{\infty} x_0^\ell \sum_{\substack{k_1, \dots, k_\ell \geq 1 \\ \sum k_i = n}} \binom{n}{k_1, \dots, k_\ell} \prod_{i=1}^{\ell} \mathcal{Q}_{k_i-1}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}). \quad (12.59)$$

This can be rewritten in terms of exponential generating functions as

$$\mathbf{P}(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) \frac{t^n}{n!} = \frac{1}{1 - x_0 Y(t)} \quad (12.60)$$

where $Y(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) t^n / n!$ satisfies (12.22) with $\psi_i = (-1)^i e_i$. Solving (12.22)/(12.60) by Lagrange inversion gives for $n \geq 1$

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}) = n! [t^n] \mathbf{P}(t) = (n-1)! [y^{n-1}] \frac{x_0}{(1 - x_0 y)^2} f(y)^{-n} \quad (12.61a)$$

$$= (n-1)! \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} j x_0^j [y^{n-j}] f(y)^{-n} \quad (12.61b)$$

$$= (n-1)! \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} j x_0^j \sum_{\substack{k_1, k_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i k_i = n-j}} \binom{-n}{-n - \sum k_i, k_1, k_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{(-1)^i e_i}{i+1} \right)^{k_i} \quad (12.61c)$$

$$= (n-1)! \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} j x_0^j \sum_{\substack{k_1, k_2, \dots \geq 0 \\ \sum i k_i = n-j}} (-1)^{\sum k_i} \binom{n + \sum k_i - 1}{n-1, k_1, k_2, \dots} \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{(-1)^i e_i}{i+1} \right)^{k_i} \quad (12.61d)$$

$$= n! x_0^n + \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} j x_0^j \sum_{\lambda \vdash n-j} (-1)^{n-j-\ell(\lambda)} \frac{(n + \ell(\lambda) - 1)!}{\prod_i (i+1)^{m_i(\lambda)} m_i(\lambda)!} e_{\lambda}(\mathbf{x}). \quad (12.61e)$$

This equation agrees with Theorem 12.20(c,d) combined with the dual of (12.24b). In the special case where \mathbf{x} consists of m ones (one of which is x_0) and the rest zeroes, we have $\phi(w) = 1/(1-w)^m$, hence $Y(t) = 1 - [1 - (m+1)t]^{1/(m+1)}$ and $\mathbf{P}(t) = [1 - (m+1)t]^{-1/(m+1)}$, so that $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{1}) = F_n^{(m+1)}$.

12.3.2 Extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials and Eulerian symmetric functions of negative type: Definitions and statement of results

We can also introduce additional indeterminates \mathbf{c} as in Section 12.2.2. Let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$ and $\mathbf{c} = (c_L)_{L \geq 0}$ be indeterminates; let $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ be the generating polynomial for increasing multi- m -ary trees on $n+1$ vertices in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by c_0 ; let $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ be the generating polynomial for unordered forests of increasing multi- m -ary trees on $n+1$ total vertices with $k+1$ components in which each i -edge gets a weight x_i and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by $c_0 c_1 \cdots c_k$; and let $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ be defined as $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ but restricted to trees in which all edges emanating from the root are 0-edges. Both $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ are homogeneous of degree n in

\mathbf{x} and in \mathbf{c} , while $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x})$ is homogeneous of degree $n - k$ in \mathbf{x} and in \mathbf{c} ; we refer to them collectively as *extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type*.

By analogy with Theorems 12.1, 12.11 and 12.20, we suspect that the following is true (though we are unable at present to prove it):

Conjecture 12.27 (Branched continued fractions for the extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type, part (a)). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have:*

- (a) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = \widehat{P}_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$, which by definition equals $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by the factorized formula (12.7) with period $p = m$.

We are, however, able to prove the remaining parts of the analogy:

Theorem 12.28 (Branched continued fractions for the extended multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type, parts (b) and (c)). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, we have:*

- (b) $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = J_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ are given by

$$\beta_i^{(\ell)} = \frac{(i+1)!}{(i-\ell)!} c_{i-\ell} c_{i-\ell+1} \cdots c_i h_{\ell+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m). \quad (12.62)$$

- (c) $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}) = J_{n,k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ are given by (12.62).

- (d) $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = \sum_{j=1}^n j! c_0 c_1 \cdots c_{j-1} x_0^j J_{n-1,j-1}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ for $n \geq 1$, where $\boldsymbol{\beta}'$ is given by (12.62).

If Conjecture 12.27 holds, it implies:

Conjecture 12.29 (Hankel-total positivity of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

We will also show:

Lemma 12.30. *The production matrix $P(\boldsymbol{\beta}')$ [cf. (7.4)] associated to the weights (12.62) is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

Using Theorems 9.14 and 9.15 we then conclude:

Corollary 12.31 (Hankel-total positivity of $\mathcal{Q}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the sequence $(\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

Corollary 12.32 (Total positivity of lower-triangular matrix of $\mathcal{Q}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$). *For every integer $m \geq 1$, the lower-triangular matrix $(\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c}))_{n,k \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise totally positive, jointly in the indeterminates \mathbf{x} and \mathbf{c} .*

Of course, by specializing Conjecture 12.27, Theorem 12.28, Conjecture 12.29, Lemma 12.30, and Corollaries 12.31 and 12.32 to $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{1}$, we recover Theorem 12.20, Corollary 12.22, Lemma 12.23, and Corollaries 12.24 and 12.25.

These definitions, conjectures and results extend in an obvious way to $m = \infty$. In particular, the definition of $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ can be rephrased as: $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ is the generating formal power series for increasing ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with i children gets a weight $h_i(\mathbf{x})$, and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by c_0 . Similarly, $\mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ is the generating formal power series for increasing ordered trees on $n + 1$ vertices in which each vertex with i children gets a weight $h_i(\mathbf{x})$, except for the root, which gets a weight x_0^i , and each vertex at level L gets a weight c_L , divided by c_0 .

12.3.3 Proof by bijection to labeled lattice paths

The proof of Theorem 12.28 is almost identical to that of Theorem 12.11, with only some slight changes to replace m -Lukasiewicz paths by ∞ -Lukasiewicz paths, sets by multisets, and elementary symmetric functions by complete homogeneous symmetric functions. We therefore supply only a sketch.

PROOF OF THEOREM 12.28. We will construct a bijection from the set of ordered forests of increasing multi- m -ary trees on the vertex set $[n + 1]$ with $k + 1$ components to the set of \mathbf{L} -labeled reversed partial ∞ -Łukasiewicz paths from $(0, k)$ to $(n, 0)$, where the label sets \mathbf{L} will be defined below.

The definition of the steps s_j is the same as in the proof of Theorem 12.11; but since the number of children of a vertex is unbounded, we have only $-1 \leq s_j < \infty$. The path ω is therefore a reversed Łukasiewicz path of length n .

The label ξ_j will be an ordered pair $\xi_j = (\xi'_j, \xi''_j)$ where ξ'_j is a positive integer and ξ''_j is a multiset on $\{0, \dots, m - 1\}$; more precisely, the label set $L(s, h)$ for a step s starting at height h will be

$$L(s, h) = [h + 1] \times \left(\binom{\{0, \dots, m - 1\}}{s + 1} \right) \quad (12.63)$$

where $\binom{S}{r}$ denotes the set of r -element multisets on S (that is, the set of multi-indices $(n_i)_{i \in S}$ of nonnegative integers such that $\sum n_i = r$). As before, the label ξ'_j will say into which of the $h_{j-1} + 1$ “vacant slots” (numbered in order of their creation) the node j is to be inserted³⁰; and the label ξ''_j will say which children node j has.

The computation of the weights is the same as in the proof of Theorem 12.11; but since we are here dealing with multi- m -ary trees rather than $(m + 1)$ -ary trees, the summation over ξ''_j gives a complete homogeneous symmetric function $h_{s+1}(x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$ instead of an elementary symmetric function $e_{s+1}(x_0, \dots, x_m)$. This gives the weights (12.62) and proves Theorem 12.28(b,c).

To prove Theorem 12.28(d), we observe that, for $n \geq 1$, $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ is the same as $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{c})$ except that the edges emanating from the root are constrained to be

³⁰We trust that there will be no confusion between the heights h_j and the elementary symmetric functions $h_n(\mathbf{x})$.

0-edges. If the root has j children, this means that the first step of the reversed Lukasiewicz path is $s_0 = j - 1$, and it gets a weight $c_0 x_0^j$ rather than the usual $c_0 h_j(\mathbf{x})$. Therefore, the *last* step of the Lukasiewicz path goes from height $\ell = j - 1$ to height 0. We remove this last step, yielding a partial Lukasiewicz path from $(0, 0)$ to $(n - 1, j - 1)$, and then include explicitly the weight for this step: instead of $\beta_{j-1}^{(j-1)} = \widehat{c}_0 \cdots \widehat{c}_{j-1} h_j(\mathbf{x})$ where $\widehat{c} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} (k + 1)c_k$, it is $\widehat{c}_0 \cdots \widehat{c}_{j-1} x_0^j$. This proves Theorem 12.28(d). \square

PROOF OF LEMMA 12.30. The proof is identical to that of Lemma 12.13, with the Jacobi–Trudi formula for h_n [149, Theorem 7.16.1] replacing that for e_n . \square

The remark after the proof of Lemma 12.13 concerning total positivity in the Schur order also holds here.

12.3.4 Proof by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method

We will now prove Theorem 12.20(a) by the Euler–Gauss recurrence method; we use the same notation and preliminary definitions as in Section 12.2.4. We need to prove

$$g_{k,n} - g_{k-1,n} = \alpha_{k+m} g_{k+m,n-1} \quad \text{for } k, n \geq 0, \quad (12.64)$$

where the weights α are the Eulerian-quasi-affine weights (12.5) with period $p = m$, i.e.

$$\alpha_k = \lfloor k/m \rfloor x_{k \bmod m}. \quad (12.65)$$

Proposition 12.33 (Euler–Gauss recurrence for multivariate Eulerian polynomials of negative type). *Let $\mathbf{x} = (x_0, \dots, x_{m-1})$ be indeterminates; we work in the ring $R = \mathbb{Z}[\mathbf{x}]$. Set $g_{k,n} = \delta_{n0}$ for $k < 0$, and then define $g_{k,n}$ for $k, n \geq 0$ by the recurrence*

$$g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+i} \right) g_{k,n-1} + g_{k-m,n} \quad (12.66)$$

where α are given by (12.65) and \mathcal{D}_m^- is given by (12.57). Then:

- (a) $g_{k,0} = 1$ for all $k \in \mathbb{Z}$.
- (b) $(g_{k,n})$ satisfies the recurrence (12.64).
- (c) $(g_{k,n})$ also satisfies the recurrence

$$g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=0}^m \alpha_{k+i} \right) g_{k,n-1} + g_{k-m-1,n} \quad \text{for } k, n \geq 0. \quad (12.67)$$

- (d) For $0 \leq k \leq m - 1$, we have $g_{k,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=0}^k x_i \right)^n 1$, while for $k = m$ we have

$$g_{m,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i + 2x_0 \right)^n 1.$$

Therefore $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = g_{0,n} = (\mathcal{D}_m^- + x_0)^n 1$, and more generally $S_{n|k}^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}) = g_{k,n}$.

Note that we are using (12.65) also to define $\alpha_i = 0$ for $0 \leq i \leq m-1$. This implies that (12.64) holds also for $-m \leq k \leq -1$.

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 12.33. (a) holds trivially as in Proposition 12.19.

(b) We will now prove that (12.64) holds. The proof will be by an outer induction on k and an inner induction on n . The base cases $k = -m, \dots, -1$ hold trivially. Now suppose that (12.64) holds for a given k and all $n \geq 0$; we want to prove it when k is replaced by $k+m$, i.e. that

$$g_{k+m,n} - g_{k+m-1,n} - \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-1} = 0 \quad \text{for all } n \geq 0. \quad (12.68)$$

We will prove (12.68) by induction on n . It holds for $n = 0$ because $g_{k+m,0} = g_{k+m-1,0} = 1$ and $g_{k+2m,-1} = 0$. If $n > 0$, then we use (12.66) on each of the three terms on the left-hand side of (12.68), giving

$$g_{k+m,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m+i} \right) g_{k+m,n-1} + g_{k,n} \quad (12.69a)$$

$$g_{k+m-1,n} = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m-1+i} \right) g_{k+m-1,n-1} + g_{k-1,n} \quad (12.69b)$$

$$\alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-1} = \alpha_{k+2m} \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+2m+i} \right) g_{k+2m,n-2} + \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+m,n-1} \quad (12.69c)$$

Using $\alpha_{j+m} = \alpha_j + x_{j \bmod m}$, and using the fact that \mathcal{D}_m^- is a pure first-order differential operator and hence satisfies the Leibniz rule, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{LHS of (12.68)} &= \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_{k+m-1+i} \right) (g_{k+m,n-1} - g_{k+m-1,n-1} - \alpha_{k+2m} g_{k+2m,n-2}) \\ &\quad + g_{k+2m,n-2} (\mathcal{D}_m^- \alpha_{k+2m}) \\ &\quad + (g_{k,n} - g_{k-1,n} - \alpha_{k+m} g_{k+m,n-1}) \\ &\quad + x_{k \bmod m} (g_{k+m,n-1} - g_{k+m,n-1}) \\ &\quad - \alpha_{k+2m} \left(x_{k \bmod m} + \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \right) g_{k+2m,n-2}. \end{aligned} \quad (12.70)$$

The first term vanishes by the hypothesis of the inner induction on n ; the third term vanishes by the hypothesis of the outer induction on k ; and the fourth term vanishes. On the other hand, from (12.65) and the definition of \mathcal{D}_m^- we have

$$\mathcal{D}_m^- \alpha_{k+2m} = (\lfloor k/m \rfloor + 2) \mathcal{D}_m^- x_{k \bmod m} \quad (12.71a)$$

$$= (\lfloor k/m \rfloor + 2) x_{k \bmod m} \left(x_{k \bmod m} + \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \right) \quad (12.71b)$$

$$= \alpha_{k+2m} \left(x_{k \bmod m} + \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \right), \quad (12.71c)$$

so the second term in (12.70) cancels the fifth term.

(c) Using (12.64) with $k \rightarrow k-m$ (which is valid as noted above since $k-m \geq -m$), we get $g_{k-m,n} = g_{k-m-1,n} + \alpha_k g_{k,n-1}$. Substituting this on the right-hand side of (12.66) gives (12.67).

(d) For $0 \leq k \leq m$, the term $g_{k-m-1,n}$ on the right-hand side of (12.67) is simply δ_{n0} . Then $\sum_{i=0}^m \alpha_{k+i} = \sum_{i=0}^k x_i$ for $0 \leq k \leq m-1$, or $\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i + 2x_0$ for $k = m$. So (d) is an immediate consequence. \square

Remark. When $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{1}$, we can use

$$\mathcal{D}_m^- \prod_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i^{n_i} \Big|_{\mathbf{x}=\mathbf{1}} = (m+1) \sum_{i=0}^{m-1} n_i \quad (12.72)$$

together with the fact that $g_{k,n-1}$ is homogeneous in \mathbf{x} of degree $n-1$, to specialize (12.66) as

$$g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1}) = [(m+1)(n-1) + k + 1]g_{k,n-1}(\mathbf{1}) + g_{k-m,n}(\mathbf{1}). \quad (12.73)$$

It follows that for $0 \leq k \leq m-1$, the $g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1})$ are shifted multifactorials:

$$g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1}) = \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} [k+1 + j(m+1)] = C_n(k+1, m+1). \quad (12.74)$$

Moreover, for $k = m$ we can specialize (12.67) as

$$g_{m,n}(\mathbf{1}) = [(m+1)(n-1) + m + 2]g_{m,n-1}(\mathbf{1}) + g_{-1,n}(\mathbf{1}), \quad (12.75)$$

to yield

$$g_{m,n}(\mathbf{1}) = \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} [m+2 + j(m+1)] = C_n(m+2, m+1) \quad (12.76)$$

[note that we have skipped one step compared to (12.74)]. However, for $k > m$ the forms get more complicated: $g_{k,n}(\mathbf{1})$ is a linear combination of $\lfloor (k+1)/(m+1) \rfloor + 1$ shifted multifactorials. These can be computed by symbolic algebra for any given m and k : for instance, for $m = 2$ the first few are

$$g_{0,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (3n-2)!!! = C_n(1, 3) \quad (12.77a)$$

$$g_{1,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (3n-1)!!! = C_n(2, 3) \quad (12.77b)$$

$$g_{2,n}(\mathbf{1}) = (3n+1)!!! = C_n(4, 3) \quad (12.77c)$$

$$g_{3,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -(3n+1)!!! + (3n+2)!!! = -C_n(4, 3) + 2C_n(5, 3) \quad (12.77d)$$

$$g_{4,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -\frac{(3n+2)!!!}{2} + \frac{(3n+4)!!!}{2} = -C_n(5, 3) + 2C_n(7, 3) \quad (12.77e)$$

$$g_{5,n}(\mathbf{1}) = -(3n+4)!!! + \frac{(3n+5)!!!}{2} = -4C_n(7, 3) + 5C_n(8, 3) \quad (12.77f)$$

But we have not been able to find a general expression for the coefficients in these sums. ■

We have thus shown that $P^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m^- + x_0)^n 1$. To complete the proof of Theorem 12.20(a) we need to show that $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}(\mathbf{x}) = (\mathcal{D}_m^- + x_0)^n 1$, as asserted in Proposition 12.26.

PROOF OF PROPOSITION 12.26. We will treat the cases of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}$ in parallel, and write A_n as a shorthand for either one.

Consider vertex $n + 1$ in an increasing multi- m -ary tree on $n + 1$ vertices: it is necessarily a j -child for some $j \in \{0, \dots, m - 1\}$ of some vertex $v \in [n]$. There are three possibilities (see Figure 20):

- (i) v is the root, and $n + 1$ is its rightmost j -child. [In the case of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$ this entails $j = 0$.]
- (ii) v is a non-root vertex, and $n + 1$ is its rightmost j -child. Let e be the edge from v to its parent.
- (iii) $n + 1$ is not the rightmost j -child of v ; therefore $n + 1$ has a j -sibling immediately to its right. Let e be the edge from v to this sibling.

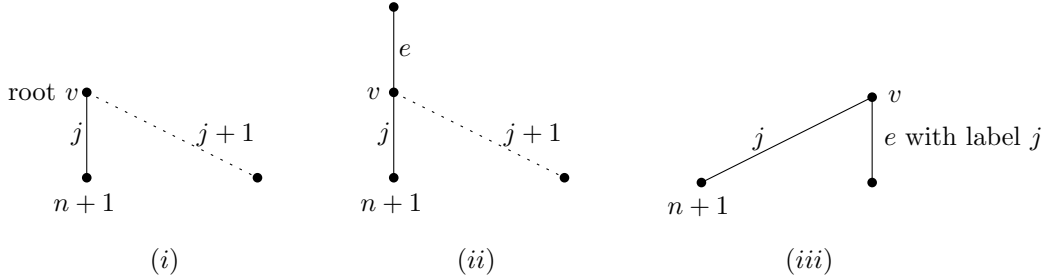


Figure 20. The three possibilities for the vertex $n + 1$.

And conversely, an increasing multi- m -ary tree on $n + 1$ vertices is obtained from an increasing multi- m -ary tree on n vertices by inserting vertex $n + 1$ in one of these three ways: either we make $n + 1$ the rightmost j -child of the root, for some j [= 0 in the case of $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$]; or we choose an edge e and insert $n + 1$ in way (ii) or way (iii), again for some j .

Possibility (i) gives weight $x_0 A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$, or $\left(\sum_{j=0}^{m-1} x_j\right) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}$.

Possibility (ii) gives weight $\left(\sum_{j=0}^{m-1} x_j\right) \left(\sum_{i=0}^{m-1} x_i \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}\right) A_{n-1}$.

Possibility (iii) gives weight $\left(\sum_{j=0}^{m-1} x_j^2 \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j}\right) A_{n-1}$.

Adding these together gives $A_n = (\mathcal{D}_m^- + x_0) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$, and $A_n = \left(\mathcal{D}_m^- + \sum_{j=0}^{m-1} x_j\right) A_{n-1}$ for $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}$.

$\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}$ is handled similarly to $\mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}$, with two small differences: in possibility (i) there are $k + 1$ different roots where vertex $n + 1$ could be attached; or it could be made a new isolated vertex. \square

It is curious that the combinatorial arguments in the proofs of Propositions 12.6 and 12.26 are so different. It would be of interest to find a unified understanding of these two results, and ideally a generalization.

12.4 A final observation

Please note that there is a perfect analogy between the periodic case (of period $m + 1$ or m) studied in Section 10 and the Eulerian-quasi-affine case (again of period $m + 1$ or m) studied here. The Fuss–Narayana polynomials and series of positive type $(P_n^{(m)}, Q_n^{(m)}, Q_{n,k}^{(m)}, P_n^{(\infty)}, Q_n^{(\infty)}, Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)})$, which correspond to period $m + 1$, and those of negative type $(P_n^{(m)-}, Q_n^{(m)-}, Q_{n,k}^{(m)-}, P_n^{(\infty)-}, Q_n^{(\infty)-}, Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-})$, which correspond to period m , are the generating polynomials or series for *unlabeled* ordered trees (or ordered forests of unlabeled ordered trees) of suitable types: $(m + 1)$ -ary, ∞ -ary, multi- m -ary or multi- ∞ -ary, respectively, and with (P) or without (Q) constraints on the labels of the edges emanating from the root (see Propositions 10.6–10.16). Similarly, the Eulerian polynomials and series of positive type $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}, \mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)}, \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)}, \mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)}, \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)})$, which correspond to period $m + 1$, and those of negative type $(\mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}, \mathcal{Q}_n^{(m)-}, \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(m)-}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}, \mathcal{Q}_n^{(\infty)-}, \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-})$, which correspond to period m , are the generating polynomials or series for *increasingly labeled* ordered trees (or unordered forests of increasingly labeled ordered trees) of exactly the same types, with exactly the same weights. In both cases the simplest objects are the symmetric functions $Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)} = \omega Q_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}$ and $\mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)} = \omega \mathcal{Q}_{n,k}^{(\infty)-}$, in which all vertices of the tree are treated in an identical and symmetric manner. Then the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials $P_n^{(m)}, P_n^{(m)-}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(m)}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(m)-}$ and their $m \rightarrow \infty$ limits $P_n^{(\infty)}, P_n^{(\infty)-}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)}, \mathcal{P}_n^{(\infty)-}$ are variants in which the edges emanating from the root are constrained to be 0-edges; as a consequence, these quantities are symmetric functions of $(x_i)_{i \geq 1}$ with a non-symmetric dependence on x_0 .

12.5 Stirling permutations and r th-order Eulerian polynomials

A word $\mathbf{w} = w_1 \cdots w_L$ on a totally ordered alphabet \mathbb{A} is called a **Stirling word** if $i < j < k$ and $w_i = w_k$ imply $w_j \geq w_i$: that is, between any two occurrences of any letter a , only letters that are larger than or equal to a are allowed. (Equivalently, between any two successive occurrences of the letter a , only letters that are larger than a are allowed.) Now let $\mathbf{r} = (r_1, \dots, r_n)$ be a finite sequence of nonnegative integers, and define the multiset $M_{\mathbf{r}} = \{1^{r_1}, 2^{r_2}, \dots, n^{r_n}\}$ consisting of r_i copies of the letter i ; it has total cardinality $|\mathbf{r}| = \sum r_i$. A **permutation** of $M_{\mathbf{r}}$ is a word $w_1 \cdots w_{|\mathbf{r}|}$ containing r_i copies of the letter i , for each $i \in [n]$; it is called a **Stirling permutation** of $M_{\mathbf{r}}$ if it is also a Stirling word. The number of Stirling permutations

of $M_{\mathbf{r}}$ is [44, 82]

$$(r_1 + 1)(r_1 + r_2 + 1) \cdots (r_1 + \dots + r_{n-1} + 1), \quad (12.78)$$

which is easy to see by induction since the r_n copies of n have to occur as a block, and this block can be inserted in any of $r_1 + \dots + r_{n-1} + 1$ positions in a Stirling permutation of $\{1^{r_1}, 2^{r_2}, \dots, (n-1)^{r_{n-1}}\}$.

Stirling permutations were introduced by Gessel and Stanley [71] for the case $r_1 = \dots = r_n = 2$; this was generalized to $r_1 = \dots = r_n = r$ [which we denote by the shorthand $\mathbf{r} = (r^n)$] by Gessel [67] and Park [113, 114], and to general multisets $M_{\mathbf{r}}$ by Brenti [22, 25] and others [44, 82]. We refer to Stirling permutations of $M_{(r^n)}$ as ***r-Stirling permutations*** of order n . It follows from (12.78) that the number of r -Stirling permutations of order n is the multifactorial $F_n^{(r)}$.

For any word $\mathbf{w} = w_1 \cdots w_L$ on a totally ordered alphabet \mathbb{A} , a pair $(i, i+1)$ with $1 \leq i \leq L-1$ is called a ***descent*** (resp. ***ascent***, ***plateau***) if $w_i > w_{i+1}$ (resp. $w_i < w_{i+1}$, $w_i = w_{i+1}$). We call the index i (resp. $i+1$) the beginning (resp. end) of the descent, ascent or plateau. We write $\text{des}(\mathbf{w})$ for the number of descents in the word \mathbf{w} . If \mathbf{w} is a Stirling word, then only the last occurrence of each letter j can be the beginning of a descent, and this can happen only for letters j that are not the smallest letter of \mathbb{A} ; so $0 \leq \text{des}(\mathbf{w}) \leq |\mathbb{A}| - 1$ for $\mathbf{w} \neq \emptyset$ (of course $\text{des}(\emptyset) = 0$). We write $\langle \mathbf{r} \rangle_k$ for the number of Stirling permutations of $M_{\mathbf{r}}$ with k descents, and call them the *multiset Eulerian numbers*; we then define the ***r-Eulerian polynomial*** $A_{\mathbf{r}}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n \langle \mathbf{r} \rangle_k x^k$. When $\mathbf{r} = (r^n)$ we write $\langle \mathbf{r} \rangle_k = \langle n \rangle_k^{(r)}$ and call them the ***rth-order Eulerian numbers***; for $r = 1, 2$ we also use the notations $\langle n \rangle_k$ and $\llbracket n \rrbracket_k$, respectively.³¹ We define the ***rth-order Eulerian polynomials***

$$A_n^{(r)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n \langle n \rangle_k^{(r)} x^k. \quad (12.79)$$

The r th-order Eulerian numbers satisfy the recurrence

$$\langle n \rangle_k^{(r)} = (k+1) \langle n-1 \rangle_k^{(r)} + [rn - (r-1) - k] \langle n-1 \rangle_{k-1}^{(r)} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (12.80)$$

with initial condition $\langle n \rangle_k^{(r)} = \delta_{0k}$. It follows easily from (12.80) that $\langle n \rangle_{n-1}^{(r)} = F_n^{(r-1)}$ and $\sum_{k=0}^n \langle n \rangle_k^{(r)} = F_n^{(r)}$.

A bijection from r -Stirling permutations of order n to increasing $(r+1)$ -ary trees with n vertices was found by Gessel [67] (see [113]) and independently by Janson *et al.* [82] (see also [93]), and can be described as follows: Decompose the Stirling

³¹Here we follow the convention of Graham *et al.* [75] that (when $n \geq 1$) $\langle n \rangle_k^{(r)}$ is nonzero for $0 \leq k \leq n-1$. Many other authors [44, 71, 82, 113] use the convention that the final index L is always the beginning of a descent (e.g. by imposing the boundary condition $w_{L+1} = 0$), so that (when $n \geq 1$) $\langle n \rangle_k^{(r)}$ is nonzero for $1 \leq k \leq n$.

permutation as $\mathbf{w} = \mathbf{w}_0 1 \mathbf{w}_1 1 \cdots \mathbf{w}_{r-1} 1 \mathbf{w}_r$. Put vertex 1 at the root, and for each nonempty subword \mathbf{w}_i , create an i -child of the root provisionally labeled \mathbf{w}_i ; then repeat this process recursively on each subword, using the smallest letter of the subword in place of 1; at the end, each node of the tree will have a label $j \in [n]$. See [82] for a description of the inverse bijection.

We can use this bijection to map statistics between Stirling permutations and trees. It is not difficult to prove recursively that:

Lemma 12.34. *Let \mathbf{w} be an r -Stirling permutation of order n , and let T be the corresponding increasing $(r+1)$ -ary tree on the vertex set $[n]$. Then:*

(i) *For $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $1 \leq i \leq r-1$, the following are equivalent:*

- (a) *The vertex $j \in T$ has an i -child.*
- (b) *In the word \mathbf{w} , between the i th and $(i+1)$ st occurrences of the letter j there is a nonempty subword. [Of course, all entries in this subword are $> j$.]*
- (c) *In the word \mathbf{w} , the i th occurrence of the letter j is the beginning of an ascent.*
- (d) *In the word \mathbf{w} , the $(i+1)$ st occurrence of the letter j is the end of a descent.*

(ii) *For $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $i = 0$, the following are equivalent:*

- (a) *The vertex $j \in T$ has an 0-child.*
- (d) *In the word \mathbf{w} , the first occurrence of the letter j is the end of a descent.*

(iii) *For $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $i = r$, the following are equivalent:*

- (a) *The vertex $j \in T$ has an r -child.*
- (c) *In the word \mathbf{w} , the last (i.e. r th) occurrence of the letter j is the beginning of an ascent.*

It follows from Lemma 12.34 that the multivariate Eulerian polynomial $\mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(\mathbf{x})$ is the generating polynomial for r -Stirling permutations of order n in which we give a weight x_i ($0 \leq i \leq r-1$) whenever the $(i+1)$ st occurrence of a letter is the end of a descent, and a weight x_r whenever the last (i.e. r th) occurrence of a letter is the beginning of an ascent. Therefore, taking $x_0 = \cdots = x_{r-1} = x$ and $x_r = 1$, we see that $\mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(x, \dots, x, 1)$ gives a weight x for all descents and hence is the r th-order Eulerian polynomial $A_n^{(r)}(x)$. But $\mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(\mathbf{x})$ is symmetric in its arguments, so we can equivalently take $x_0 = 1$ and $x_1 = \cdots = x_r = x$, and write

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(r)}(1, x, \dots, x) = \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(1, x, \dots, x) = A_n^{(r)}(x). \quad (12.81)$$

A slightly different definition of the r th-order Eulerian polynomials was used in [46]:

$$E_0^{[r]}(x) = 1 \quad (12.82a)$$

$$E_n^{[r]}(x) = x A_n^{(r)}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} \left\langle n \atop k \right\rangle^{(r)} x^{k+1} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (12.82b)$$

Then the reversed r th-order Eulerian polynomials are defined by $\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x) = x^n E_n^{[r]}(1/x)$, i.e.

$$\overline{E}_0^{[r]}(x) = 1 \quad (12.83a)$$

$$\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x) = x^{n-1} A_n^{(r)}(1/x) = \sum_{k=0}^{n-1} \left\langle \begin{matrix} n \\ k \end{matrix} \right\rangle^{(r)} x^{n-1-k} \quad \text{for } n \geq 1 \quad (12.83b)$$

and satisfy $\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(0) = F_n^{(r-1)}$ and $\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(1) = F_n^{(r)}$. Then (12.83b) and (12.81) give

$$\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x) = x^{n-1} A_n^{(r)}(1/x) = \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(x, 1, \dots, 1). \quad (12.84)$$

But since $\mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(\mathbf{x})$ is symmetric in its arguments, we can equivalently take one of x_1, \dots, x_r (say, x_r) to be x and all the other x_i (including x_0) to be 1; then

$$\mathcal{P}_n^{(r)}(1, \dots, 1, x) = \mathcal{Q}_{n-1}^{(r)}(1, \dots, 1, x) = \overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x). \quad (12.85)$$

By Theorem 12.1(a) and Corollary 12.3 we have:

Corollary 12.35. *For any integer $r \geq 1$, the reversed r th-order Eulerian polynomial $\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x)$ equals $P_n^{(r, r+1)}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})$ where $\mathbf{x} = (1, \dots, 1, x)$. In other words, it equals the r -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial $S_n^{(r)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the weights $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by the Eulerian-quasi-affine formula (12.5) with period $p = r + 1$ and $\mathbf{x} = (1, \dots, 1, x)$.*

Therefore the sequence $(\overline{E}_n^{[r]}(x))_{n \geq 0}$ is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive in x .

Of course, this univariate result — which even for $r = 2$ was a mystery for us [46] until recently — is merely a very special case of the results for multivariate Eulerian polynomials.

13 Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series I: $m+1F_0$

As mentioned in the introduction, Euler [48, section 21] found in 1746 the continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n! t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (13.1)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = \alpha_{2k} = k$. In fact, in the same paper Euler [48, section 26] found the more general continued fraction

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a(a+1)(a+2)\cdots(a+n-1)t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{at}{1 - \frac{1t}{1 - \frac{(a+1)t}{1 - \frac{2t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (13.2)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = a+k-1$ and $\alpha_{2k} = k$. And this is, in turn, the $b=1$ special case of the beautiful continued fraction for ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_2F_0$ [159, section 92]:

$$\frac{{}_2F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_2F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a, b-1 \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)} = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{at}{1 - \frac{bt}{1 - \frac{(a+1)t}{1 - \frac{(b+1)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (13.3)$$

with coefficients $\alpha_{2k-1} = a+k-1$ and $\alpha_{2k} = b+k-1$. (We do not know who was the first to discover (13.3), which is a limiting case of Gauss' [66] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$.)

Here we will show that all these continued fractions have "higher" generalizations: namely, for every integer $m \geq 1$, the ratio of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_{m+1}F_0$ has a nice m -branched continued fraction.

Theorem 13.1 (m -branched continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_0$).

Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define the polynomials $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1})$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}) t^n = \frac{{}_{m+1}F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_{m+1}F_0\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1}-1 \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}. \quad (13.4)$$

Then $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ is given by

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha} = a_1 \cdots a_m, a_2 \cdots a_{m+1}, a_3 \cdots a_{m+1}(a_1+1), a_4 \cdots a_{m+1}(a_1+1)(a_2+1), \dots, \quad (13.5)$$

which can be seen as products of m successive pre-alfas:

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\text{pre}} = a_1, \dots, a_{m+1}, a_1+1, \dots, a_{m+1}+1, a_1+2, \dots, a_{m+1}+2, \dots \quad (13.6)$$

Please note that here the “pre-alfas” (13.6) are quasi-affine of period $m + 1$. So this is a kind of “higher” generalization of the situation studied in the preceding section: no longer are the α themselves quasi-affine (when $m > 1$); rather, they are products of m successive pre-alfas that are quasi-affine.

Please note also that the polynomials $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1})$ are symmetric in a_1, \dots, a_m (while a_{m+1} plays a distinguished role). But the α defined in (13.5) are not symmetric in a_1, \dots, a_m (when $m > 1$). This illustrates once again the nonuniqueness of m -S-fractions when $m \geq 2$.

The proof of Theorem 13.1 will be based on the Euler–Gauss recurrence method as generalized to $m > 1$ in Proposition 2.3.³² Namely, fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and let $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ be a sequence of formal power series (with coefficients in some commutative ring R) with constant term 1, which satisfies a linear three-term recurrence of the form

$$g_k(t) - g_{k-1}(t) = \alpha_{k+m} t g_{k+m}(t) \quad \text{for } k \geq 0 \quad (13.7)$$

for some coefficients $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ in R . Then $g_0(t)/g_{-1}(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} S_n^{(m)}(\alpha) t^n$ where $S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ is the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomial evaluated at the specified values α .

Now it is easy to show that a suitably defined sequence of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_{m+1}F_0$ satisfies a recurrence of the form (13.7). The key fact is the following:

Lemma 13.2 (Three-term contiguous relation for ${}_rF_0$). *Fix an integer $r \geq 1$. Then the hypergeometric series ${}_rF_0$ satisfies*

$$\begin{aligned} {}_rF_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{i-1}, a_i + 1, a_{i+1}, \dots, a_r \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) - {}_rF_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \\ = a_1 \cdots \not{a}_i \cdots a_r t {}_rF_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a_1 + 1, \dots, a_r + 1 \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \end{aligned} \quad (13.8)$$

where \not{a}_i indicates that a_i is omitted from the product.

The identity (13.8) is easily proven by comparing coefficients of t^n on both sides; it is a special case of a more general identity for hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ [see (14.5) below].

Now define

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_{m+1}F_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \quad (13.9a)$$

$$g_0(t) = {}_{m+1}F_0 \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ - \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \quad (13.9b)$$

³²As mentioned earlier, this method (for $m = 1$) was used implicitly by Euler [48, section 21] for proving (13.1). In [48, section 26], Euler stated that the same method can be applied to the more general series (13.2), which reduces to (13.1) when $a = 1$; but he did not provide the details, and he instead proved (13.2) by an alternative method. Three decades later, however, Euler [49] returned to his original method and presented the details of the derivation of (13.2).

and define g_1, g_2, \dots by successively incrementing a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} by 1, continuing cyclically; thus

$$g_k(t) = {}_{m+1}F_0 \left(a_1 + \left\lceil \frac{k}{m+1} \right\rceil, a_2 + \left\lceil \frac{k-1}{m+1} \right\rceil, \dots, a_{m+1} + \left\lceil \frac{k-m}{m+1} \right\rceil \middle| t \right) \quad (13.10)$$

for all $k \geq -1$. It is easy to see, using (13.8), that the sequence $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ satisfies the recurrence (13.7) with the α stated in (13.5). This completes the proof of Theorem 13.1.

When $a_{m+1} = 1$, Theorem 13.1 simplifies because the denominator hypergeometric series reduces to 1, and we get:

Corollary 13.3 (*m*-branched continued fraction for products of Stirling cycle polynomials). *Define the homogenized Stirling cycle polynomials by*

$$C_n(x, y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (x + jy) \quad (13.11)$$

[cf. (12.9)]. Then the polynomials

$$P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; 1) = \prod_{i=1}^m C_n(a_i, 1) \quad (13.12)$$

equal $S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ where $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ is given by (13.5) with $a_{m+1} = 1$. More generally, the polynomials

$$\prod_{i=1}^m C_n(x_i, y_i) = \left(\prod_{i=1}^m y_i \right)^n P_n^{(m)}(x_1/y_1, \dots, x_m/y_m; 1) \quad (13.13)$$

equal $S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ where $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ is given by (13.5) evaluated at $a_i = x_i/y_i$ and $a_{m+1} = 1$ and multiplied by $\prod_{i=1}^m y_i$, i.e.

$$\alpha = x_1 \cdots x_m, x_2 \cdots x_m y_1, x_3 \cdots x_m y_2 (x_1 + y_1), x_4 \cdots x_m y_3 (x_1 + y_1)(x_2 + y_2), \dots \quad (13.14)$$

Examples. 1. Take $a_1 = \dots = a_m = 1$ in Corollary 13.3; then $P_n^{(m)} = (n!)^m$. The pre-alphas are

$$\alpha^{\text{pre}} = \underbrace{1, \dots, 1}_{m+1 \text{ times}}, \underbrace{2, \dots, 2}_{m+1 \text{ times}}, \underbrace{3, \dots, 3}_{m+1 \text{ times}}, \dots \quad (13.15)$$

and the α are products of m successive pre-alphas. For $m = 2$ this is shown in (1.5).

2. Take $a_1 = \dots = a_m = \frac{1}{2}$ in Corollary 13.3; then $P_n^{(m)} = (2n-1)!!^m / 2^{mn}$. We can get the sequence $(2n-1)!!^m$ by multiplying all the α by 2^m , or equivalently by multiplying all the α^{pre} by 2. The pre-alphas are thus

$$\alpha^{\text{pre}} = \underbrace{1, \dots, 1}_m, \underbrace{2, 3, \dots, 3}_m, \underbrace{4, 5, \dots, 5}_m, 6, \dots \quad (13.16)$$

and the α are products of m successive pre-alphas. Similar methods handle $(3n-2)!!!$, $(3n-1)!!!$ and so forth.

3. Take $a_j = j/m$ for $1 \leq j \leq m$ in Corollary 13.3; then $P_n^{(m)} = (mn)!/(m^m)^n$. We can get the sequence $(mn)!$ by multiplying all the α by m^m , or equivalently by multiplying all the α^{pre} by m . The pre-alphas are thus

$$\alpha^{\text{pre}} = 1, 2, 3, \dots, m, m, m+1, m+2, m+3, \dots, 2m, 2m, \dots \quad (13.17)$$

and the α are products of m successive pre-alphas. For $m=2$ this is shown in (1.6). ■

Combining Theorem 13.1 with Theorem 9.7, we conclude:

Corollary 13.4 (Hankel-total positivity for ratios of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_0$). *The sequence of polynomials $(P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}))_{n \geq 0}$ defined in (13.4) is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in all the indeterminates a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} .*

In particular, the product (13.13) of homogenized Stirling cycle polynomials is coefficientwise Hankel-totally positive, jointly in all the indeterminates x_1, \dots, x_m and y_1, \dots, y_m .

Remark. This result was conjectured a few years ago by one of us [141], based on computations of Hankel minors up to 8×8 ($m=2$) and 7×7 ($m=3$); but at that time he had no idea how to prove it. Even the fact that $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1})$ has nonnegative coefficients is not completely trivial; but this was proven by Gessel [68] using (13.8). ■

It follows from (12.9)/(13.12) that the polynomials $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; 1)$ have a simple combinatorial interpretation in terms of m independent permutations $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m$ of $[n]$:

$$P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; 1) = \sum_{\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a_1^{\text{cyc}(\sigma_1)} \dots a_m^{\text{cyc}(\sigma_m)} \quad (13.18a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a_1^{\text{rec}(\sigma_1)} \dots a_m^{\text{rec}(\sigma_m)} \quad (13.18b)$$

where $\text{cyc}(\sigma)$ [resp. $\text{rec}(\sigma)$] denotes the numbers of cycles (resp. records) in the permutation σ . It is natural to guess that the more general polynomial $P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1})$ has an interpretation

$$P_n^{(m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}) = \sum_{\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a_1^{\text{cyc}(\sigma_1)} \dots a_m^{\text{cyc}(\sigma_m)} a_{m+1}^{\text{mys1}(\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m)} \quad (13.19a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a_1^{\text{rec}(\sigma_1)} \dots a_m^{\text{rec}(\sigma_m)} a_{m+1}^{\text{mys2}(\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m)} \quad (13.19b)$$

for some “mystery statistics” *mys1* and *mys2*; but for $m > 1$ we have been unable to determine what these statistics are. For $m = 1$ the answer is known:

$$P_n^{(1)}(a; b) = \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a^{\text{cyc}(\sigma)} b^{\text{earec}(\sigma)} \quad (13.20a)$$

$$= \sum_{\sigma \in \mathfrak{S}_n} a^{\text{rec}(\sigma)} b^{\text{earec}(\sigma)} \quad (13.20b)$$

where $\text{earec}(\sigma)$ is the number of exclusive antirecords in σ (that is, antirecords that are not also records). Here (13.20b) was found three decades ago by Dumont and Kreweras [41], while (13.20a) is a specialization of the result (12.3b) found recently by Zeng and one of us [143]. So we suspect that for $m > 1$ the “mystery statistics” have something to do with exclusive antirecords; but we have been unable to find any viable candidate statistics.

Open Problem 13.5. Find the “mystery statistics” *mys1* and *mys2*.

14 Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series II:

${}_rF_s$

By a slight generalization of the method employed in the previous section, we can obtain a branched continued fraction for the ratio of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ for arbitrary integers r, s . We will in fact consider *three* different types of ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series:

$$\frac{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}, a_r - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_{s-1}, b_s - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} R_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n \quad \text{for } r, s \geq 1 \quad (14.1)$$

$$\frac{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}, a_r - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} U_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n \quad \text{for } r \geq 1, s \geq 0 \quad (14.2)$$

$$\frac{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_rF_s\left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_{s-1}, b_s - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} V_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n \quad \text{for } r \geq 0, s \geq 1 \quad (14.3)$$

We refer to (14.1)–(14.3), respectively, as the *first*, *second* and *third* ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series. We will give branched continued fractions for all three: in the first and second cases, the branching order is $m = \max(r - 1, s)$, while in the third

case it is $m = \max(r, s)$.³³ When $(r, s) = (2, 1)$, the first continued fraction reduces to Gauss' [66] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2F_1$. The second continued fraction may possibly be new, even in the classical case of ${}_2F_1$ (see the remarks below).

The proofs of these continued fractions will be based, once again, on verifying the recurrence (13.7) for a suitably defined sequence $(g_k(t))_{k \geq 1}$ of hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$. And the verifications of this recurrence will be based, once again, on three-term contiguous relations for ${}_rF_s$. The needed contiguous relations are not new [90,91]; but since they do not seem to be well known, we devote a short subsection to recalling them. We then turn to the statement and proofs of the branched continued fractions. We begin with the first continued fraction for ${}_{m+1}F_m$, for which we need to use only one type of three-term contiguous relation. Then we treat the first continued fraction for ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s , which requires combining two different three-term contiguous relations in a suitable order, or alternatively taking limits from ${}_{m+1}F_m$. Then we consider analogously the second and third continued fractions.

14.1 Three-term contiguous relations for general ${}_rF_s$

The hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ is defined by

$${}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{a_1^{\bar{n}} \cdots a_r^{\bar{n}} t^n}{b_1^{\bar{n}} \cdots b_s^{\bar{n}} n!}, \quad (14.4)$$

where we have used the notation $a^{\bar{n}} = a(a+1)\cdots(a+n-1)$. We consider (14.4) as belonging to the formal-power-series ring $R[[t]]$, where R is the ring $\mathbb{Q}(\mathbf{b})[\mathbf{a}]$ of polynomials in the indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (a_1, \dots, a_r)$ whose coefficients are rational functions in the indeterminates $\mathbf{b} = (b_1, \dots, b_s)$.

Lemma 14.1 (Three-term contiguous relations for ${}_rF_s$). *For any indices i, j we have:*

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{i-1}, a_i + 1, a_{i+1}, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) - {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \\ &= \frac{a_1 \cdots a_{i-1} a_{i+1} \cdots a_r}{b_1 \cdots b_s} t {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1 + 1, \dots, a_r + 1 \\ b_1 + 1, \dots, b_s + 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \end{aligned} \quad (14.5)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_{i-1}, b_i + 1, b_{i+1}, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) - {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \\ &= - \frac{a_1 \cdots a_r}{(b_i + 1) b_1 \cdots b_s} t {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1 + 1, \dots, a_r + 1 \\ b_1 + 1, \dots, b_{i-1} + 1, b_i + 2, b_{i+1} + 1, \dots, b_s + 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \end{aligned} \quad (14.6)$$

³³Let us remark that the trivial case of the second continued fraction for ${}_1F_0$ can indeed be viewed as yielding a 0-branched continued fraction, since the ratio of contiguous series is $1/(1-t)$. However, we will henceforth exclude from consideration this degenerate case.

$$\begin{aligned}
& {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{i-1}, a_i + 1, a_{i+1}, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_{j-1}, b_j + 1, b_{j+1}, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) - {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \\
&= \frac{(b_j - a_i) a_1 \cdots \not{a}_i \cdots a_r}{(b_j + 1) b_1 \cdots b_s} t {}_rF_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1 + 1, \dots, a_r + 1 \\ b_1 + 1, \dots, b_{j-1} + 1, b_j + 2, b_{j+1} + 1, \dots, b_s + 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)
\end{aligned} \tag{14.7}$$

where \not{a}_i indicates that a_i is omitted from the product.

These formulae are easily proven by extracting the coefficient of t^n on both sides. See [118] for further discussion of these contiguous relations (and three other similar ones) and their history.

14.2 Branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$

In this subsection we will obtain an m -branched continued fraction for the first ratio (14.1) of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$, by using the contiguous relation (14.7). This generalizes Gauss' [66] use of the ${}_2F_1$ case of (14.7) to derive a classical S-fraction for the first ratio of contiguous ${}_2F_1$ [159, Chapter XVIII]. Since the proof for ${}_{m+1}F_m$ parallels that of Theorem 13.1 but the weights α turn out to be significantly more complicated, we shall give the proof first and let that motivate the definition of the weights.

As before, we want to satisfy the recurrence (13.7) with suitably chosen coefficients α . Following the pattern of the proof of Theorem 13.1, we define

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \tag{14.8a}$$

$$g_0(t) = {}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \tag{14.8b}$$

and then define g_1, g_2, \dots by incrementing first a_1 and b_1 by 1, then a_2 and b_2 by 1, etc., continuing cyclically. Please note that this cyclicity is of period $m + 1$ for the numerator parameters but period m for the denominator parameters (strange, perhaps, but that is the way it is; when $m = 1$ it coincides with the even-odd alternation used by Gauss [66]). Thus

$$g_k(t) = {}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1 + \lceil \frac{k}{m+1} \rceil, a_2 + \lceil \frac{k-1}{m+1} \rceil, \dots, a_{m+1} + \lceil \frac{k-m}{m+1} \rceil \\ b_1 + \lceil \frac{k}{m} \rceil, b_2 + \lceil \frac{k-1}{m} \rceil, \dots, b_m + \lceil \frac{k-(m-1)}{m} \rceil \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \tag{14.9}$$

for all $k \geq -1$. Defining

$$a_{i,k} = a_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i}{m+1} \right\rceil \tag{14.10a}$$

$$b_{i,k} = b_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i}{m} \right\rceil \tag{14.10b}$$

we can write this simply as

$$g_k(t) = {}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_{1,k}, a_{2,k}, \dots, a_{m+1,k} \\ b_{1,k}, b_{2,k}, \dots, b_{m,k} \end{matrix} \middle| t \right). \quad (14.11)$$

Now, at stage k the “active” variables in the contiguous relation (14.7) will be $a'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} a_{[(k-1) \bmod (m+1)]+1,k}$ and $b'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} b_{[(k-1) \bmod m]+1,k}$. We then see that the recurrence (13.7) is satisfied with

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \neq k \bmod m+1} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.12)$$

Hence:

Theorem 14.2 (m -branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$).
Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define $R_n^{(m+1,m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}; b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m)$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} R_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{{}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}{{}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}. \quad (14.13)$$

Then $R_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.12).

14.3 Branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s

We now consider arbitrary integers $r, s \geq 1$ and derive an m -branched continued fraction for the first ratio (14.1) of contiguous ${}_rF_s$, where $m = \max(r-1, s)$. Since we have already treated ${}_{m+1}F_m$, we can assume that $r \neq s+1$. There are thus two cases:

- (a) $r > s+1$, hence $r = m+1$: so we are treating ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $1 \leq s < m$.
- (b) $r < s+1$, hence $s = m$: so we are treating ${}_rF_m$ with $1 \leq r < m+1$.

For each case we will give two proofs: the first is based on taking limits in the ${}_{m+1}F_m$ result; the second is a direct proof of the recurrence (13.7) by using the identities (14.5) and (14.7) [when $r > s+1$] or (14.6) and (14.7) [when $r < s+1$] in a suitable order.

Case ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $1 \leq s < m$. In Theorem 14.2 we replace t by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} t$ and let $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.13) this gives precisely the desired ratio of ${}_{m+1}F_s$ (after a relabeling $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , this multiplies (14.12) by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s}$ and then sends $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. There are two cases, depending on whether $k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod m$ or $k \equiv m-s+1, \dots, m \pmod m$.

(i) If $k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod m$, then the factor $(b'_k - a'_k)/(b'_k - 1)$ tends to 1, and the terms $1 \leq i \leq m-s$ disappear from the denominator product. We thus have (before relabeling)

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{\prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{\prod_{i=m-s+1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.14)$$

(ii) If $k \equiv m-s+1, \dots, m \pmod m$, then the factor $(b'_k - a'_k)/(b'_k - 1)$ remains as is, and the terms $1 \leq i \leq m-s$ again disappear from the denominator product. We thus have (before relabeling)

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=m-s+1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.15)$$

We now relabel $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$: to handle this, we replace (14.10b) by

$$\widehat{b}_{i,k} = b_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i-(m-s)}{m} \right\rceil \quad (14.16)$$

and define $\widehat{b}'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \widehat{b}_{[(k-1)-(m-s) \bmod m]+1,k}$. With $a'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} a_{[(k-1) \bmod (m+1)]+1,k}$ as before, we then get

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} \frac{\prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{\prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod m \\ \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv m-s+1, \dots, m \pmod m \end{cases} \quad (14.17)$$

Of course, this formula holds also when $s = m$ since it is then equivalent to (14.12).

We can alternatively get this same result by working directly with the recurrences. It suffices to define

$$g_k(t) = {}_{m+1}F_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_{1,k}, a_{2,k}, \dots, a_{m+1,k} \\ \widehat{b}_{1,k}, \widehat{b}_{2,k}, \dots, \widehat{b}_{s,k} \end{matrix} \middle| t \right), \quad (14.18)$$

i.e. the same as (14.11) but with $\widehat{b}_{i,k}$ replacing $b_{i,k}$. Concretely, this means that we increment the denominator variables b_1, \dots, b_s in order and then pause for $m-s$ steps before continuing cyclically; the underlying cyclicity (in the “time” variable k) is thus of period m , as seen in (14.16). Of course, we increment the numerator variables cyclically of period $m+1$ as usual. Then the recurrence (13.7) with the weights (14.17) can be verified by using (14.5) when $k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod m$, and

(14.7) when $k \equiv m-s+1, \dots, m \pmod m$. As this verification is purely computational, we leave it to the reader.³⁴

Case ${}_rF_m$ with $1 \leq r < m+1$. In Theorem 14.2 we replace t by $t/(a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r})$ and let $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.13) this gives precisely the desired ratio of ${}_rF_m$ (after a relabeling $a_i \rightarrow a_{i-(m+1-r)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , it divides (14.12) by $a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}$ and then sends $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. There are two cases, depending on whether $k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1}$ or $k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m+1 \pmod{m+1}$.

(i) If $k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1}$, then the factor $b'_k - a'_k$ becomes -1 , and the terms $1 \leq i \leq m+1-r$ disappear from the numerator product. We thus have (before relabeling)

$$\alpha_{m+k} = - \frac{\prod_{i=m+2-r}^{m+1} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.19)$$

(ii) If $k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m+1 \pmod{m+1}$, then the factor $b'_k - a'_k$ remains as is, and the terms $1 \leq i \leq m+1-r$ again disappear from the numerator product. We thus have (before relabeling)

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i=m+2-r}^{m+1} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.20)$$

We now relabel $a_i \rightarrow a_{i-(m+1-r)}$: to handle this, we replace (14.10a) by

$$\widehat{a}_{i,k} = a_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i-(m+1-r)}{m+1} \right\rceil \quad (14.21)$$

and define $\widehat{a}'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \widehat{a}_{[(k-1)-(m+1-r) \bmod m+1]+1,k}$. We then get

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^r \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1} \\ \frac{(b'_k - \widehat{a}'_k) \prod_{i \neq k-(m+1-r) \bmod m+1} \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m+1 \pmod{m+1} \end{cases} \quad (14.22)$$

Of course, this formula holds also when $r = m+1$ since it is then equivalent to (14.12).

³⁴We remark that the principal difficulty in this second proof is guessing the correct (g_k) and (α_i) . It is therefore convenient that we were able to determine the (α_i) by the limiting method.

We can alternatively get this same result by working directly with the recurrences. It suffices to define

$$g_k(t) = {}_rF_m \left(\widehat{a}_{1,k}, \widehat{a}_{2,k}, \dots, \widehat{a}_{r,k} \mid t \right), \quad (14.23)$$

i.e. the same as (14.11) but with $\widehat{a}_{i,k}$ replacing $a_{i,k}$. Concretely, this means that we increment the numerator variables a_1, \dots, a_r in order and then pause for $m + 1 - r$ steps before continuing cyclically; the underlying cyclicity (in the “time” variable k) is thus of period $m + 1$, as seen in (14.21). Of course, we increment the denominator variables cyclically of period m as usual. Then the recurrence (13.7) with the weights (14.22) can be verified by using (14.6) when $k \equiv 1, \dots, m + 1 - r \pmod{m + 1}$, and (14.7) when $k \equiv m + 2 - r, \dots, m + 1 \pmod{m + 1}$. We again leave this verification to the reader.

In summary:

Theorem 14.3 (m -branched continued fraction for first ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$).

Fix integers $r, s \geq 1$ and let $m = \max(r - 1, s)$. Define $R_n^{(r,s)}(a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}; a_r; b_1, \dots, b_{s-1}; b_s)$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} R_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{{}_rF_s \left(a_1, \dots, a_r \mid t \right)}{{}_rF_s \left(a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}, a_r - 1 \mid t \right)}. \quad (14.24)$$

Then $R_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.17) when $r \geq s + 1$ and by (14.22) when $r \leq s + 1$.

For ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $1 \leq s \leq m$, we can deduce from this continued fraction a simple sufficient condition for Hankel-total positivity:

Corollary 14.4. Fix integers $1 \leq s \leq m$. Let b_1, \dots, b_s be real numbers satisfying $b_1, \dots, b_{s-1} > 0$ and $b_s > 1$, and define $B = \min_{1 \leq i \leq s} b_i$. Now let R be a partially ordered commutative ring containing the real numbers (with their usual ordering), and let a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} be elements of R satisfying $0 \leq a_i \leq B$. Then the sequence $(R_n^{(m+1,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}))_{n \geq 0}$ defined by (14.24) is Hankel-totally positive in R .

In particular, if $R = \mathbb{R}$, then the sequence $(R_n^{(m+1,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}))_{n \geq 0}$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence.

PROOF. By Theorem 9.8 it suffices to verify that the weights (14.17) are nonnegative. We manifestly have $a_{i,k} \geq a_i \geq 0$ and $\widehat{b}_{i,k} \geq b_i > 0$, so the cases with $k \equiv 1, \dots, m - s \pmod{m}$ are handled. Also, $\widehat{b}'_k - 1 = b_s - 1 > 0$ when $k = 0$, while $\widehat{b}'_k - 1 \geq b_{[(k-1) \bmod m] + 1} > 0$ when $k \geq m - s + 1$ since the ceiling in (14.10b) is at least 1. Finally, $\widehat{b}'_k - a'_k \geq b_{[(k-1) - (m-s) \bmod m] + 1} - a_{[(k-1) \bmod m + 1] + 1} \geq 0$ since the ceiling in (14.10b) is at least as large as the ceiling in (14.10a) [the numerators in the ceilings are identical, but (14.10a) has a denominator $m + 1$ in place of m]. So the cases with $k \equiv m - s + 1, \dots, m \pmod{m}$ are also handled. \square

For $s = 0$ there is a corresponding result, namely Corollary 13.4, which implies Hankel-total positivity when $R = \mathbb{R}[\mathbf{a}]$ with the coefficientwise order. But when $s \geq 1$ and R is a polynomial ring over the reals with the coefficientwise order, the upper bound $a_i \leq B$ in the hypothesis of Corollary 14.4 forces the a_i to be constants, so that we are effectively working in $R = \mathbb{R}$. We have nevertheless chosen to state the corollary in greater generality because there may exist some interesting applications to other partially ordered commutative rings (for instance, polynomial rings with a pointwise order [26, 94, 106, 121]).

14.4 Branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$

We now turn to the m -branched continued fraction for the second ratio (14.2) of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$. As before, we want to satisfy the recurrence (13.7) with suitably chosen coefficients α . We define $g_k(t)$ for $k \geq 0$ by exactly the same formula (14.9)/(14.11) that was used in Section 14.2 for the first ratio. However — and here is the slight twist — we define $g_{-1}(t)$ by

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right), \quad (14.25)$$

which is different from (14.8a)/(14.9)/(14.11) because it has b_m in the denominator instead of $b_m - 1$. We are therefore incrementing the variables a_i and b_i cyclically as before *except for* a special treatment of the step from g_{-1} to g_0 .

If $k \geq 1$, then the recurrence (13.7) holds with exactly the same coefficients $(\alpha_i)_{i \geq m+1}$ that were defined in (14.12), because the g_j for $j \geq 0$ are exactly the same as those defined in (14.9)/(14.11). On the other hand, for $k = 0$ we prove directly, using the contiguous relation (14.5), that

$$g_0(t) - g_1(t) = \frac{a_1 \cdots a_m}{b_1 \cdots b_m} t g_m(t). \quad (14.26)$$

We therefore have:

Theorem 14.5 (m -branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}F_m$).
Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define $U_n^{(m+1,m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}; b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m)$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} U_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{{}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}{{}_{m+1}F_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}. \quad (14.27)$$

Then $R_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ is given by

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} \frac{a_1 \cdots a_m}{b_1 \cdots b_m} & \text{if } k = 0 \\ \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \neq k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (14.28)$$

Here the coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are identical to those in Theorem 14.2 except for the first coefficient α_m .

When $m = 1$, Theorem 14.5 gives a classical S-fraction

$$\frac{{}_2F_1\left(\begin{matrix} a, b \\ c \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)}{{}_2F_1\left(\begin{matrix} a, b-1 \\ c \end{matrix} \middle| t\right)} = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{\frac{a}{c}t}{1 - \frac{\frac{b(c-a)}{c(c+1)}t}{1 - \frac{\frac{(a+1)(c-b+1)}{(c+1)(c+2)}t}}{1 - \dots}}} \quad (14.29)$$

with coefficients

$$\alpha_1 = \frac{a}{c} \quad (14.30a)$$

$$\alpha_{2k-1} = \frac{(a+k-1)(c-b+k-1)}{(c+2k-3)(c+2k-2)} \quad \text{for } k \geq 2 \quad (14.30b)$$

$$\alpha_{2k} = \frac{(b+k-1)(c-a+k-1)}{(c+2k-2)(c+2k-1)} \quad (14.30c)$$

We would be very surprised if this S-fraction were new, but we have been unable to find it in the literature. We would be grateful to any readers who could supply a relevant reference. Frank [60, eq. (2.3)] gives a continued fraction for ${}_2F_1(a, b; c; t)/{}_2F_1(a, b-1; c; t)$, but it is a T-fraction, not an S-fraction.

14.5 Branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s

We now consider arbitrary integers $r \geq 1$ and $s \geq 0$ and derive an m -branched continued fraction for the second ratio (14.2) of contiguous ${}_rF_s$, where $m = \max(r-1, s)$. The case $(r, s) = (1, 0)$ is trivial, so we exclude it henceforth; then $m \geq 1$. Since we have already treated ${}_{m+1}F_m$, we can assume that $r \neq s+1$. There are thus two cases:

- (a) $r > s+1$, hence $r = m+1$: so we are treating ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $0 \leq s < m$.

(b) $r < s + 1$, hence $s = m$: so we are treating ${}_r F_m$ with $1 \leq r < m + 1$.

For each case there are again two proofs: a proof based on taking limits in the ${}_{m+1}F_m$ result, and a direct proof of the recurrence (13.7) by using the identities (14.5) and (14.7) in a suitable order. We will be brief since the proofs are similar to those in Section 14.3.

Case ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $0 \leq s < m$. In Theorem 14.5 we replace t by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} t$ and let $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.27) this gives precisely the desired ratio of ${}_{m+1}F_s$ (after a relabeling $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , this multiplies (14.28) by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s}$ and then sends $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. For $k = 0$, the resulting coefficient α_m (before relabeling) is simply $(a_1 \cdots a_m)/(b_{m-s+1} \cdots b_m)$. For $k > 0$ the coefficients (14.28) of the second continued fraction are identical to the coefficients (14.12) of the first continued fraction, so our analysis in Section 14.3 holds without change. After relabeling $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$, the result is

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} \frac{a_1 \cdots a_m}{b_1 \cdots b_s} & \text{if } k = 0 \\ \frac{\prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{\prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m} \\ \frac{(\widehat{b}'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(\widehat{b}'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv m-s+1, \dots, m \pmod{m} \text{ and } k \neq 0 \end{cases} \quad (14.31)$$

These coefficients are identical to those in (14.17) except that α_m is different. Of course, the result (14.31) holds also when $s = m$ since it is then equivalent to (14.12); for $s = 0$ it coincides with (13.5).

We can alternatively get this same result by working directly with the recurrences. It suffices to define $g_k(t)$ for $k \geq 0$ by the same formula (14.18) as was used for the first continued fraction. However, we now define $g_{-1}(t)$ by

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_{m+1}F_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1} - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} \middle| t \right). \quad (14.32)$$

If $k \geq 1$, then the recurrence (13.7) holds with exactly the same coefficients $(\alpha_i)_{i \geq m+1}$ that were defined in (14.17) because the g_j for $j \geq 0$ are exactly the same as those defined in (14.18). On the other hand, for $k = 0$ we prove directly, using the contiguous relation (14.5), that

$$g_0(t) - g_1(t) = \frac{a_1 \cdots a_m}{b_1 \cdots b_s} t g_m(t), \quad (14.33)$$

which gives the correct coefficient α_m .

Case ${}_r F_m$ with $1 \leq r < m+1$. In Theorem 14.5 we replace t by $t/(a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r})$ and let $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.27) this gives precisely

the desired ratio of ${}_rF_m$ (after a relabeling $a_i \rightarrow a_{i-(m+1-r)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , it divides (14.28) by $a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}$ and then sends $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. For $k = 0$, the resulting coefficient α_m (before relabeling) is simply $(a_{m+2-r} \cdots a_{m+1})/(b_1 \cdots b_m)$. For $k > 0$ the coefficients (14.28) of the second continued fraction are identical to the coefficients (14.12) of the first continued fraction, so our analysis in Section 14.3 holds without change. After relabeling $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$, the result is

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} \frac{a_1 \cdots a_r}{b_1 \cdots b_m} & \text{if } k = 0 \\ -\frac{\prod_{i=1}^r \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1} \\ \frac{(b'_k - \widehat{a}'_k) \prod_{i \neq k-(m+1-r) \pmod{m+1}} \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m+1 \pmod{m+1} \\ & \text{and } k \neq 0 \end{cases} \quad (14.34)$$

These coefficients are identical to those in (14.22) except that α_m is different. Of course, the result (14.34) holds also when $r = m+1$ since it is then equivalent to (14.12).

We can alternatively get this same result by working directly with the recurrences. It suffices to define $g_k(t)$ for $k \geq 0$ by the same formula (14.23) as was used for the first continued fraction. However, we now define $g_{-1}(t)$ by

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_rF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{r-1}, a_r - 1 \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right). \quad (14.35)$$

If $k \geq 1$, then the recurrence (13.7) holds with exactly the same coefficients $(\alpha_i)_{i \geq m+1}$ that were defined in (14.22) because the g_j for $j \geq 0$ are exactly the same as those treated in Section 14.3. On the other hand, for $k = 0$ we prove directly, using the contiguous relation (14.5), that

$$g_0(t) - g_1(t) = \frac{a_1 \cdots a_r}{b_1 \cdots b_m} t g_m(t), \quad (14.36)$$

which gives the correct coefficient α_m .

In summary:

Theorem 14.6 (m -branched continued fraction for second ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$). Define $U_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})$ by (14.2). Then:

- (a) For $0 \leq s \leq m$, we have $U_n^{(m+1,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.31).
- (b) For $1 \leq r \leq m+1$, we have $U_n^{(r,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.34).

When $r = m = 1$, Theorem 14.6(b) gives a classical S-fraction for ${}_1F_1(a; b; t)/{}_1F_1(a - 1; b; t)$. Once again we would be surprised if this S-fraction were new, but we have been unable to find it in the literature.

For ${}_{m+1}F_s$ with $0 \leq s \leq m$, we can deduce from Theorem 14.6(a) a simple *sufficient* condition for Hankel-total positivity:

Corollary 14.7. *Fix integers $0 \leq s \leq m$. Let b_1, \dots, b_s be real numbers satisfying $b_1, \dots, b_s > 0$, and define $B = \min_{1 \leq i \leq s} b_i$ (or $B = +\infty$ in case $s = 0$). Now let R be a partially ordered commutative ring containing the real numbers (with their usual ordering), and let a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} be elements of R satisfying $0 \leq a_i \leq B$. Then the sequence $(U_n^{(m+1,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}))_{n \geq 0}$ defined by (14.2) is Hankel-totally positive in R .*

In particular, if $R = \mathbb{R}$, then the sequence $(U_n^{(m+1,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}))_{n \geq 0}$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence.

PROOF. Essentially the same as the proof of Corollary 14.4, except that here the restriction $b_s > 1$ is not needed: in Corollary 14.4 it was employed to handle α_m (i.e. $k = 0$), but now $\alpha_m = (a_1 \cdots a_r)/(b_1 \cdots b_m)$. \square

For $s = 0$ this coincides with Corollary 13.4. For $s \geq 1$, however, the upper bound $a_i \leq B$ imposes the same limitations as were discussed after Corollary 14.4 when R is a polynomial ring with the coefficientwise order.

14.6 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_0F_m$

For the third ratio (14.3) of contiguous hypergeometric series, the simplest case is ${}_0F_m$ because it needs only the contiguous relation (14.6). In order to obtain a continued fraction with nonnegative coefficients α , it is convenient to replace t by $-t$ in the generating function.

Theorem 14.8 (m -branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_0F_m$). *Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define $V_n^{(0,m)}(b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m)$ by*

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n V_n^{(0,m)}(b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m) t^n = \frac{{}_0F_m \left(\begin{matrix} - \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| -t \right)}{{}_0F_m \left(\begin{matrix} - \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| -t \right)}. \quad (14.37)$$

Then $(-1)^n V_n^{(0,m)}(\mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ where $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ is given by

$$\alpha = \frac{1}{(b_m - 1)b_1 \cdots b_m}, \frac{1}{b_1 \cdots b_m(b_1 + 1)}, \frac{1}{b_2 \cdots b_m(b_1 + 1)(b_2 + 1)}, \dots, \quad (14.38)$$

which can be seen as products of $m + 1$ successive pre-alphas:

$$\alpha^{\text{pre}} = \frac{1}{b_m - 1}, \frac{1}{b_1}, \frac{1}{b_2}, \dots, \frac{1}{b_m}, \frac{1}{b_1 + 1}, \frac{1}{b_2 + 1}, \dots, \frac{1}{b_m + 1}, \frac{1}{b_1 + 2}, \dots. \quad (14.39)$$

PROOF. Define

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_0F_m \left(\begin{matrix} - \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| -t \right) \quad (14.40a)$$

$$g_0(t) = {}_0F_m \left(\begin{matrix} - \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| -t \right) \quad (14.40b)$$

and define g_1, g_2, \dots by successively incrementing b_1, \dots, b_m by 1, continuing cyclically; thus

$$g_k(t) = {}_0F_m \left(\begin{matrix} - \\ b_1 + \lceil \frac{k}{m} \rceil, b_2 + \lceil \frac{k-1}{m} \rceil, \dots, b_m + \lceil \frac{k-(m-1)}{m} \rceil \end{matrix} \middle| -t \right) \quad (14.41)$$

for all $k \geq -1$. It is easy to see, using (14.6), that the sequence $(g_k(t))_{k \geq -1}$ satisfies the recurrence (13.7) with the weights (14.38). \square

When $m = 1$ this reduces to the classical S-fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_0F_1$ [159, eqn. (91.4)], which includes Lambert's [95] continued fraction for tangent as the $b = 3/2$ special case.

Because of the denominators in (14.38), we cannot use Theorem 14.8 to obtain *coefficientwise* Hankel-total positivity, but we can anyway deduce:

Corollary 14.9. *Let b_1, \dots, b_m be real numbers satisfying $b_1, \dots, b_{m-1} > 0$ and $b_m > 1$. Then the sequence $((-1)^n V_n^{(0,m)}(b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m))_{n \geq 0}$ is a Stieltjes moment sequence.*

14.7 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_mF_m$

For the third ratio (14.3) of contiguous hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$, the natural starting case is ${}_mF_m$ (*not* ${}_{m+1}F_m$); we will obtain an m -branched continued fraction for it. As before, we want to satisfy the recurrence (13.7) with suitably chosen coefficients α . We begin with

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_mF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m \\ b_1, \dots, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \quad (14.42a)$$

$$g_0(t) = {}_mF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right) \quad (14.42b)$$

We then define g_1, g_2, \dots by incrementing first a_1 and b_1 by 1, continuing cyclically with period m for the b_i , and with period $m + 1$ for the a_i , taking a pause after incrementing a_m . This can be written for all $k \geq -1$ as

$$g_k(t) = {}_mF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_{1,k}, a_{2,k}, \dots, a_{m,k} \\ b_{1,k}, b_{2,k}, \dots, b_{m,k} \end{matrix} \middle| t \right). \quad (14.43)$$

where

$$a_{i,k} = a_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i}{m+1} \right\rceil \quad (14.44a)$$

$$b_{i,k} = b_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i}{m} \right\rceil \quad (14.44b)$$

Please note that this definition is identical to (14.10), despite the different interpretation: here there is no variable a_{m+1} , but the denominator $m+1$ in (14.44a) implements the pause.

We will now use two different contiguous relations depending on the value of the “time” k :

(i) If $k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$, then at stage k we will use the contiguous relation (14.6) with the “active” variable $b'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} b_{[(k-1) \bmod m]+1,k}$. (This corresponds to the “pause” in the a_i .)

(ii) If $k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$, then at stage k we will use the contiguous relation (14.7) with the “active” variables $a'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} a_{[(k-1) \bmod (m+1)]+1,k}$ and $b'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} b_{[(k-1) \bmod m]+1,k}$

We then see that the recurrence (13.7) is satisfied with

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} -\frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \\ \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \end{cases} \quad (14.45)$$

We therefore have:

Theorem 14.10 (m -branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_mF_m$).
Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define $V_n^{(m,m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m)$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} V_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{{}_mF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}{{}_mF_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m - 1 \end{matrix} \middle| t \right)}. \quad (14.46)$$

Then $V_n^{(m,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ is given by (14.45).

Remark. For the classical case of ${}_1F_1$, this third continued fraction — for ${}_1F_1(a; b; t)/{}_1F_1(a; b-1; t)$ with weights (14.57) — is known, but apparently not very well known. It can be found in the books of Perron [116, 3rd ed., vol. 2, p. 124]

and Khovanskii [88, p. 140] and in the Wikipedia article on Gauss' continued fraction [160], but not (as far as we can tell) in any of the other standard books on continued fractions [34, 83, 100, 159]. However, as Perron observes, it is equivalent to the first continued fraction for ${}_1F_1(a; b; t)/{}_1F_1(a-1; b-1; t)$ by virtue of the identity ${}_1F_1(a; b; t) = e^t {}_1F_1(b-a; b; -t)$. ■

14.8 Branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$ for general r, s

We now consider arbitrary integers $r \geq 0$ and $s \geq 1$ and derive an m -branched continued fraction for the third ratio (14.3) of contiguous ${}_rF_s$, where $m = \max(r, s)$. Since we have already treated ${}_mF_m$, we can assume that $r \neq s$. There are thus two cases:

- (a) $r > s$, hence $r = m$: so we are treating ${}_mF_s$ with $1 \leq s < m$.
- (b) $r < s$, hence $s = m$: so we are treating ${}_rF_m$ with $0 \leq r < m$.

For brevity we will give only the proof based on taking limits in the ${}_mF_m$ result; however, there is also a proof using directly the contiguous relations.

Case ${}_mF_s$ with $1 \leq s < m$. In Theorem 14.10 we replace t by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} t$ and let $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.46) this gives precisely the desired ratio of ${}_mF_s$ (after a relabeling $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , this multiplies (14.45) by $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s}$ and then sends $b_1, \dots, b_{m-s} \rightarrow \infty$. Since the coefficients (14.46) involve $k \bmod m+1$ but the limits involve $k \bmod m$, we now need to distinguish (alas!) four cases:

- (i) If $k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$ and $k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} \rightarrow 0 \quad (14.47)$$

because $b'_k - 1 \rightarrow \infty$ (the other $b_{i,k}$ with $1 \leq i \leq m-s$ cancel against the multiplier $b_1 \cdots b_{m-s}$).

- (ii) If $k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$ and $k \not\equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} \rightarrow - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=m-s+1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.48)$$

(iii) If $k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$ and $k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} \rightarrow \frac{\prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{\prod_{i=m-s+1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.49)$$

(iv) If $k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$ and $k \not\equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times b_1 \cdots b_{m-s} \rightarrow \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=m-s+1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.50)$$

We now relabel $b_i \rightarrow b_{i-(m-s)}$: to handle this, we define

$$\widehat{b}_{i,k} = b_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i-(m-s)}{m} \right\rceil \quad (14.51)$$

as before [cf. (14.16)] and $\widehat{b}'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \widehat{b}_{[(k-1)-(m-s) \bmod m]+1,k}$. We then get:

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \text{ and} \\ & k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m} \\ - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(\widehat{b}'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \text{ and} \\ & k \not\equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m} \\ \frac{\prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{\prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \text{ and} \\ & k \equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m} \\ \frac{(\widehat{b}'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \not\equiv k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(\widehat{b}'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^s \widehat{b}_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \not\equiv 0 \pmod{m+1} \text{ and} \\ & k \not\equiv 1, \dots, m-s \pmod{m} \end{cases} \quad (14.52)$$

Case ${}_r F_m$ with $0 \leq r < m$. In Theorem 14.10 we replace t by $t/(a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r})$ and let $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. On the right-hand side of (14.46) this gives precisely the desired ratio of ${}_r F_m$ (after a relabeling $a_i \rightarrow a_{i-(m+1-r)}$). For the coefficient α_{m+k} , this divides (14.45) by $a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}$ and then sends $a_1, \dots, a_{m+1-r} \rightarrow \infty$. There are

three cases, depending on whether $k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$, $k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1}$, or $k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m \pmod{m+1}$.

(i) If $k \equiv 0 \pmod{m+1}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times \frac{1}{a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}} \rightarrow - \frac{\prod_{i=m+2-r}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.53)$$

(ii) If $k \equiv 1, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \neq k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times \frac{1}{a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}} \rightarrow - \frac{\prod_{i=m+2-r}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}, \quad (14.54)$$

which is identical to (14.53).

(iii) If $k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m \pmod{m+1}$, then (before relabeling) we have

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i \neq k \pmod{m+1}} a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} \times \frac{1}{a_1 \cdots a_{m+1-r}} \rightarrow \frac{(b'_k - a'_k) \prod_{i=m+2-r}^m a_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}}. \quad (14.55)$$

We now relabel $a_i \rightarrow a_{i-(m+1-r)}$: to handle this, we replace (14.10a) by

$$\widehat{a}_{i,k} = a_i + \left\lceil \frac{k+1-i-(m+1-r)}{m+1} \right\rceil \quad (14.56)$$

and define $\widehat{a}'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \widehat{a}_{[(k-1)-(m+1-r) \pmod{m+1}]+1,k}$. We then get

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \begin{cases} - \frac{\prod_{i=1}^r \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv 0, \dots, m+1-r \pmod{m+1} \\ \frac{(b'_k - \widehat{a}'_k) \prod_{i \neq k-(m+1-r) \pmod{m+1}} \widehat{a}_{i,k}}{(b'_k - 1) \prod_{i=1}^m b_{i,k}} & \text{if } k \equiv m+2-r, \dots, m \pmod{m+1} \end{cases} \quad (14.57)$$

When $r = 0$ this is simply (14.38) [with a sign change because in Theorem 14.8 we used $-t$ in place of t].

In summary:

Theorem 14.11 (m -branched continued fraction for third ratio of contiguous ${}_rF_s$). Define $V_n^{(r,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})$ by (14.3). Then:

(a) For $1 \leq s \leq m$, we have $V_n^{(m,s)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.52).

(b) For $0 \leq r \leq m$, we have $V_n^{(r,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where the $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are given by (14.57).

Because of the minus signs in the coefficients (14.52) and (14.57), we are unable to give any result for Hankel-total positivity, except for the case ${}_0F_m$ that was already treated in Corollary 14.9.

15 Ratios of contiguous hypergeometric series III:

${}_r\phi_s$

The branched continued fractions for ratios of hypergeometric series ${}_rF_s$ derived in the preceding section can be straightforwardly generalized to branched continued fractions for ratios of basic hypergeometric series ${}_r\phi_s$.

The basic hypergeometric series ${}_r\phi_s$ is defined by [65]

$${}_r\phi_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} ; q, t \right) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(a_1; q)_n (a_2; q)_n \cdots (a_r; q)_n}{(b_1; q)_n (b_2; q)_n \cdots (b_s; q)_n (q; q)_n} \left((-1)^n q^{n(n-1)/2} \right)^{s+1-r} t^n \quad (15.1)$$

where

$$(a; q)_n \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (1 - aq^j). \quad (15.2)$$

We consider (15.1) as belonging to the formal-power-series ring $R[[t]]$, where R is the ring $\mathbb{Q}(\mathbf{b}, q)[\mathbf{a}]$ of polynomials in the indeterminates $\mathbf{a} = (a_1, \dots, a_r)$ whose coefficients are rational functions in the indeterminates $\mathbf{b} = (b_1, \dots, b_s)$ and q .³⁵

The proofs of the branched continued fractions for basic hypergeometric series are completely analogous to those given in the previous two sections for ordinary hypergeometric series, but using the appropriately modified contiguous relations [90, 91]. For brevity we will show only the principal case, namely, the m -branched continued fraction for the first ratio of ${}_{m+1}\phi_m$. This generalizes Heine's [80] continued fraction for ratios of contiguous ${}_2\phi_1$ [34, p. 395]. The contiguous relation that we will need to use is [90, eq. (3.3)]

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_r\phi_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{i-1}, qa_i, a_{i+1}, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_{j-1}, qb_j, b_{j+1}, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} ; q, t \right) - {}_r\phi_s \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_r \\ b_1, \dots, b_s \end{matrix} ; q, t \right) \\ &= (-1)^{s+1-r} \frac{(a_i - b_j) (1 - a_1) \cdots \overline{1 - a_i} \cdots (1 - a_r)}{(1 - qb_j) (1 - b_1) \cdots (1 - b_s)} t \\ & \quad \times {}_r\phi_s \left(\begin{matrix} qa_1, \dots, qa_r \\ qb_1, \dots, qb_{j-1}, q^2b_j, qb_{j+1}, \dots, qb_s \end{matrix} ; q, q^{s+1-r}t \right) \quad (15.3) \end{aligned}$$

³⁵**Warning:** The older books of Bailey [13] and Slater [138] define ${}_r\phi_s$ *without* the factor $[(-1)^n q^{n(n-1)/2}]^{s+1-r}$. This should be borne in mind when interpreting the formulae from these books whenever $r \neq s + 1$.

where $\overline{\text{stuff}}$ indicates that stuff is omitted from the product.

15.1 Branched continued fraction for ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}\phi_m$

The proof for ${}_{m+1}\phi_m$ is closely analogous to the one given in Section 14.2 for ${}_{m+1}F_m$. As before, we want to satisfy the recurrence (13.7) with suitably chosen coefficients α . Following the pattern of the proof of Theorem 14.2, we define

$$g_{-1}(t) = {}_{m+1}\phi_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1}/q \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m/q \end{matrix}; q, t \right) \quad (15.4a)$$

$$g_0(t) = {}_{m+1}\phi_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix}; q, t \right) \quad (15.4b)$$

and then define g_1, g_2, \dots by multiplying first a_1 and b_1 by q , then multiplying a_2 and b_2 by q , etc., continuing cyclically. As before, this cyclicity is of period $m+1$ for the numerator parameters but period m for the denominator parameters. Thus

$$g_k(t) = {}_{m+1}\phi_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_{1,k}, a_{2,k}, \dots, a_{m+1,k} \\ b_{1,k}, b_{2,k}, \dots, b_{m,k} \end{matrix}; q, t \right). \quad (15.5)$$

for all $k \geq -1$, where

$$a_{i,k} = q^{\lceil (k+1-i)/(m+1) \rceil} a_i \quad (15.6a)$$

$$b_{i,k} = q^{\lceil (k+1-i)/m \rceil} b_i \quad (15.6b)$$

Now, at stage k the ‘‘active’’ variables in the contiguous relation (15.3) will be $a'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} a_{\lceil (k-1) \bmod (m+1) \rceil + 1, k}$ and $b'_k \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} b_{\lceil (k-1) \bmod m \rceil + 1, k}$. We then see that the recurrence (13.7) is satisfied with

$$\alpha_{m+k} = \frac{(a'_k - b'_k) \prod_{i \neq k \bmod m+1} (1 - a_{i,k})}{(1 - b'_k/q) \prod_{i=1}^m (1 - b_{i,k})}. \quad (15.7)$$

Note that the factors $(-1)^{s+1-r}$ and q^{s+1-r} in (15.3) disappear here because we are in the case $r = s + 1$.

Theorem 15.1 (m -branched continued fraction for ratio of contiguous ${}_{m+1}\phi_m$).
Fix an integer $m \geq 1$, and define $\Phi_n^{(m+1,m)}(a_1, \dots, a_m; a_{m+1}; b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}; b_m)$ by

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \Phi_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) t^n = \frac{{}_{m+1}\phi_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_{m+1} \\ b_1, \dots, b_m \end{matrix}; q, t \right)}{{}_{m+1}\phi_m \left(\begin{matrix} a_1, \dots, a_m, a_{m+1}/q \\ b_1, \dots, b_{m-1}, b_m/q \end{matrix}; q, t \right)}. \quad (15.8)$$

Then $\Phi_n^{(m+1,m)}(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = S_n^{(m)}(\alpha)$ where the α are given by (15.7).

16 Some final remarks

16.1 A conjecture on higher-order Genocchi numbers and Gandhi polynomials

The *Genocchi numbers* G_2, G_4, G_6, \dots [110, A110501] are positive integers defined by the exponential generating function

$$t \tan(t/2) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} G_{2n} \frac{t^{2n}}{(2n)!}. \quad (16.1)$$

Their ordinary generating function has a classical S-fraction expansion

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} G_{2n+2} t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1 \cdot 1t}{1 - \frac{1 \cdot 2t}{1 - \frac{2 \cdot 2t}{1 - \frac{2 \cdot 3t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (16.2)$$

where $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ are products of successive pairs of the pre-alphas $\alpha^{\text{pre}} = 1, 1, 2, 2, 3, 3, \dots$

More generally, define the *Gandhi polynomials* $\mathcal{G}_n(y)$ for $n \geq 1$ by the recurrence

$$\mathcal{G}_n(y) = (y+1)^2 \mathcal{G}_{n-1}(y+1) - y^2 \mathcal{G}_{n-1}(y) \quad \text{for } n \geq 2 \quad (16.3)$$

with initial condition $\mathcal{G}_1(y) = 1$. They satisfy $\mathcal{G}_n(0) = G_{2n}$ and $\mathcal{G}_n(1) = G_{2n+2}$, and a slightly modified ordinary generating function has a classical S-fraction expansion³⁶

$$1 + y \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{G}_n(y) t^n = \frac{1}{1 - \frac{y \cdot 1t}{1 - \frac{1 \cdot (y+1)t}{1 - \frac{(y+1) \cdot 2t}{1 - \frac{2 \cdot (y+2)t}{1 - \dots}}}}} \quad (16.4)$$

where $\alpha = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq 1}$ are products of successive pairs of the pre-alphas $\alpha^{\text{pre}} = y, 1, y+1, 2, y+2, 3, \dots$

Following Domaratzki [37], we now generalize the recurrence (16.3) to higher order. Define, for each integer $m \geq 1$, the *mth-order Gandhi polynomials* $\mathcal{G}_n^{[m]}(y)$ for $n \geq 1$ by the recurrence

$$\mathcal{G}_n^{[m]}(y) = (y+1)^{m+1} \mathcal{G}_{n-1}^{[m]}(y+1) - y^{m+1} \mathcal{G}_{n-1}^{[m]}(y) \quad \text{for } n \geq 2 \quad (16.5)$$

with initial condition $\mathcal{G}_1^{[m]}(y) = 1$. We then define the *mth-order Genocchi numbers* $G_{2n+2}^{[m]} = \mathcal{G}_n^{[m]}(1)$; they also satisfy $G_{2n}^{[m]} = \mathcal{G}_n^{[m]}(0)$. We conjecture an m -branched continued fraction that generalizes (16.4):

³⁶See also [42] for a two-variable generalization.

Conjecture 16.1. We have $y^m \mathcal{G}_n^{[m]}(y) = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ where $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_i)_{i \geq m}$ are products of successive $(m+1)$ -tuples of the pre-alphas

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\text{pre}} = \underbrace{y, \dots, y}_m, 1, \underbrace{y+1, \dots, y+1}_m, 2, \underbrace{y+2, \dots, y+2}_m, 3, \dots \quad (16.6)$$

In particular, when $y = 1$ we conjecture an m -branched S-fraction with integer coefficients for the m th-order Genocchi numbers.

The $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ occurring in Conjecture 16.1 are very reminiscent of those occurring in Corollary 13.3 for the products of Stirling cycle polynomials, and more generally those occurring in Theorem 13.1 for the ratios of hypergeometric series ${}_{m+1}F_0$. In both cases the pre-alphas $\boldsymbol{\alpha}^{\text{pre}}$ are the same (always quasi-affine of period $m+1$), but here we take products of successive $(m+1)$ -tuples rather than successive m -tuples.

16.2 Limitations of our method

Nearly all of the forgoing examples of Hankel-totally positive sequences have been constructed using the m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials, because this is the easiest method: it suffices to prove the m -S-fraction and verify that the coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ are nonnegative. But, just as for $m = 1$ [139, 140], there are some limitations to this method: not every sequence $\boldsymbol{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ with $a_0 = 1$ in a commutative ring R can be expressed as $a_n = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ with coefficients $\alpha_i \in R$, even if we allow m to be taken arbitrarily large. Indeed, there is a very simple necessary condition: since every m -Dyck path of nonzero length must end with an m -fall, each polynomial $S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ with $n \geq 1$ is divisible by $\alpha_m = S_1^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$; therefore, for a sequence $\boldsymbol{a} = (a_n)_{n \geq 0}$ in a commutative ring R to be expressible as $a_n = S_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha})$ with $\alpha_i \in R$, a necessary condition is that a_n is divisible in R by a_1 for all $n \geq 1$. Already this shows that many interesting combinatorial and number-theoretic sequences, such as the Apéry numbers [110, A005259]

$$A_n = \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k}^2 \binom{n+k}{k}^2 \quad (16.7a)$$

$$(A_n)_{n \geq 0} = 1, 5, 73, 1445, 33001, 819005, 21460825, 584307365, \dots, \quad (16.7b)$$

cannot be written as an m -S-fraction with *integer* coefficients $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$. (Of course, they can be written as m -S-fractions with *rational* coefficients. It is an open question whether any of these m -S-fractions have tractable closed-form expressions and/or understandable combinatorial interpretations.) Similarly, many interesting sequences of combinatorial polynomials, such as the Narayana polynomials of type B,

$$N_n^{\text{B}}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k}^2 x^k \quad (16.8a)$$

$$(N_n^{\text{B}}(x))_{n \geq 0} = 1, 1+x, 1+4x+x^2, \dots, \quad (16.8b)$$

cannot be written as an m -S-fraction with coefficients in the polynomial ring $\mathbb{R}[x]$.

This limitation does not apply to the m -Thron–Rogers polynomials $T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$, so it is possible that some of these sequences \mathbf{a} might be expressible as $a_n = T_n^{(m)}(\boldsymbol{\alpha}, \boldsymbol{\delta})$ with coefficients $\alpha_i, \delta_i \in R$. But the high degree of nonuniqueness of m -T-fractions makes it very difficult to find tractable expansions of this kind; even when $m = 1$, only a few nontrivial examples are known [46]. We consider it to be an important open problem to find T-fractions or m -T-fractions for interesting combinatorial sequences.

Yet another possible approach is to use m -J-fractions. As shown in Theorem 9.14, the sequence of m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials is Hankel-totally positive whenever the associated production matrix is totally positive. When $m = 1$ (i.e. for the ordinary Jacobi–Rogers polynomials), this is a very useful method [140], because there are convenient criteria for proving the total positivity of a tridiagonal matrix: the contiguous-principal-minors criterion [119, p. 98] [140] and the comparison theorem [140, 166]. But for $m > 1$, we have available fewer methods for proving the total positivity of an $(m, 1)$ -banded matrix. One sufficient condition, of course, is to write the matrix as a product of lower-bidiagonal and upper-bidiagonal matrices with nonnegative entries; but by Proposition 7.2 this is tantamount to saying that the m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials arise as the contraction of m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials (at least if we use the order $L_1 L_2 \cdots L_m U^*$), so we get nothing new. But there is a slight generalization of this approach that could be useful: instead of writing $P = L_1 L_2 \cdots L_m U^*$, we write $P = L_1 L_2 \cdots L_{m-1} T$ where T is tridiagonal and totally positive. If the total positivity of T has been established by some method other than factorizing it as LU^* , this method could yield Hankel-totally positive sequences of m -Jacobi–Rogers polynomials that do not simply arise as the contraction of m -Stieltjes–Rogers polynomials.

Acknowledgments

We are extremely grateful to Jérémie Bouttier for drawing our attention to [6], and to Christian Krattenthaler for drawing our attention to [90, 91]. We also wish to thank the organizers of the 80th Séminaire Lotharingien de Combinatoire (Lyon, March 2018) for the opportunity to present a preliminary version of this work.

This research was supported in part by the U.K. Engineering and Physical Sciences Research Council grant EP/N025636/1 and by a fellowship from the China Scholarship Council.

References

- [1] M. Aigner, Catalan-like numbers and determinants, *J. Combin. Theory A* **87**, 33–51 (1999).
- [2] M. Aigner, Catalan and other numbers: a recurrent theme, in: *Algebraic Combinatorics and Computer Science*, edited by H. Crapo and D. Senato (Springer-Verlag Italia, Milan, 2001), pp. 347–390.

- [3] M. Aigner, Lattice paths and determinants, in: *Computational Discrete Mathematics: Advanced Lectures*, edited by H. Alt, Lecture Notes in Computer Science #2122 (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2001), pp. 1–12.
- [4] M. Aigner and G.M. Ziegler, *Proofs from THE BOOK*, 5th ed. (Springer-Verlag, Berlin–Heidelberg, 2014).
- [5] N.I. Akhiezer, *The Classical Moment Problem and Some Related Questions in Analysis*, translated by N. Kemmer (Hafner, New York, 1965).
- [6] M. Albenque and J. Bouttier, Constellations and multicontinued fractions: Application to Eulerian triangulations, in *24th International Conference on Formal Power Series and Algebraic Combinatorics (FPSAC 2012)*, Discrete Mathematics & Theoretical Computer Science Proceedings (Nancy, France, 2012), pp. 805–816.
- [7] G.E. Andrews, R. Askey and R. Roy, *Special Functions* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1999).
- [8] D. Armstrong, Generalized noncrossing partitions and combinatorics of Coxeter groups, *Mem. Amer. Math. Soc.* **202**, no. 949 (2009).
- [9] D. Arquès and J. Françon, Arbres bien étiquetés et fractions multicontinues, in *Ninth Colloquium on Trees in Algebra and Programming*, edited by B. Courcelle (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1984), pp. 51–61.
- [10] R. Askey, Appendix to “Chapter 12 of Ramanujan’s second notebook: continued fractions”, *Rocky Mountain J. Math.* **15**, 311–318 (1985).
- [11] B.A. Asner, Jr., On the total nonnegativity of the Hurwitz matrix, *SIAM J. Appl. Math.* **18**, 407–414 (1970).
- [12] J.-C. Aval, Multivariate Fuss-Catalan numbers, *Discrete Math.* **308**, 4660–4669 (2008).
- [13] W.N. Bailey, *Generalized Hypergeometric Series* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1935). Reprinted by Stechert-Hafner, New York, 1964.
- [14] C. Banderier and P. Flajolet, Basic analytic combinatorics of directed lattice paths, *Theoret. Comput. Sci.* **281**, 37–80 (2002).
- [15] J.F. Barbero G., J. Salas and E.J.S. Villaseñor, Generalized Stirling permutations and forests: higher-order Eulerian and Ward numbers, *Electron. J. Combin.* **22**, no. 3, paper 3.37 (2015).
- [16] P. Barry, *Riordan Arrays: A Primer* (Logic Press, County Kildare, Ireland, 2016).
- [17] F. Bergeron, Combinatorics of r -Dyck paths, r -parking functions, and the r -Tamari lattices, arXiv:1202.6269 [math.CO].

- [18] F. Bergeron, P. Flajolet and B. Salvy, Varieties of increasing trees, in *CAAP '92*, edited by J.-C. Raoult, Lecture Notes in Computer Science #581 (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1992), pp. 24–48.
- [19] F. Bergeron, G. Labelle and P. Leroux, *Combinatorial Species and Tree-Like Structures* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge–New York, 1998).
- [20] B.C. Berndt, R.L. Lamphere and B.M. Wilson, Chapter 12 of Ramanujan’s second notebook: Continued fractions, *Rocky Mountain J. Math.* **15**, 235–310 (1985).
- [21] A. Borodin and G. Olshanski, *Representations of the Infinite Symmetric Group* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2017).
- [22] F. Brenti, Unimodal, log-concave and Pólya frequency sequences in combinatorics, *Mem. Amer. Math. Soc.* **81**, no. 413 (1989).
- [23] F. Brenti, Combinatorics and total positivity, *J. Combin. Theory A* **71**, 175–218 (1995).
- [24] F. Brenti, The applications of total positivity to combinatorics, and conversely, in *Total Positivity and its Applications*, edited by M. Gasca and C.A. Micchelli (Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1996), pp. 451–473.
- [25] F. Brenti, Hilbert polynomials in combinatorics, *J. Algebraic Combin.* **7**, 127–156 (1998).
- [26] G.W. Brumfiel, *Partially Ordered Rings and Semi-Algebraic Geometry*, London Mathematical Society Lecture Note Series #37 (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge–New York, 1979).
- [27] N.T. Cameron and J.E. McLeod, Returns and hills on generalized Dyck paths, *J. Integer Seq.* **19**, article 16.6.1 (2016), 28 pp.
- [28] L. Carlitz, Eulerian numbers and operators, *Collectanea Math.* **24**, 175–200 (1973).
- [29] X.-K. Chang, X.-B. Hu, H. Lei and Y.-N. Yeh, Combinatorial proofs of addition formulas, *Electron. J. Combin.* **23**, no. 1, #P1.8 (2016).
- [30] X. Chen, H. Liang and Y. Wang, Total positivity of Riordan arrays, *European J. Combin.* **46**, 68–74 (2015).
- [31] X. Chen, H. Liang and Y. Wang, Total positivity of recursive matrices, *Lin. Alg. Appl.* **471**, 383–393 (2015).
- [32] J. Cigler, Some remarks on Catalan families, *European J. Combin.* **8**, 261–267 (1987).
- [33] E.B. Curtis, D. Ingerman and J.A. Morrow, Circular planar graphs and resistor networks, *Lin. Alg. Appl.* **283**, 115–150 (1998).

- [34] A. Cuyt, V.B. Petersen, B. Verdonk, H. Waadeland and W.B. Jones, *Handbook of Continued Fractions for Special Functions* (Springer-Verlag, New York, 2008).
- [35] E. Deutsch, L. Ferrari and S. Rinaldi, Production matrices, *Adv. Appl. Math.* **34**, 101–122 (2005).
- [36] E. Deutsch, L. Ferrari and S. Rinaldi, Production matrices and Riordan arrays, *Ann. Comb.* **13**, 65–85 (2009).
- [37] M. Domaratzki, Combinatorial interpretations of a generalization of the Genocchi numbers, *J. Integer Seq.* **7**, no. 3, Article 04.3.6 (2004).
- [38] P. Duchon, On the enumeration and generation of generalized Dyck words, *Discrete Math.* **225**, 121–135 (2000).
- [39] D. Dumont, Une généralisation trivariée symétrique des nombres eulériens, *J. Combin. Theory A* **28**, 307–320 (1980).
- [40] D. Dumont, Pics de cycle et dérivées partielles, *Séminaire Lotharingien de Combinatoire* **13**, article B13a (1986).
- [41] D. Dumont and G. Kreweras, Sur le développement d’une fraction continue liée à la série hypergéométrique et son interprétation en termes de records et anti-records dans les permutations, *European J. Combin.* **9**, 27–32 (1988).
- [42] D. Dumont and A. Randrianarivony, Sur une extension des nombres de Genocchi, *European J. Combin.* **16**, 147–151 (1995).
- [43] A. Dyachenko, Total nonnegativity of infinite Hurwitz matrices of entire and meromorphic functions, *Complex Anal. Oper. Theory* **8**, 1097–1127 (2014).
- [44] A. Dzhumadil’daev and D. Yeliussizov, Stirling permutations on multisets, *European J. Combin.* **36**, 377–392 (2014).
- [45] P.H. Edelman, Chain enumeration and noncrossing partitions, *Discrete Math.* **31**, 171–180 (1980).
- [46] A. Elvey Price and A.D. Sokal, Phylogenetic trees, augmented perfect matchings, and a Thron-type continued fraction (T-fraction) for the Ward polynomials, in preparation.
- [47] G. Eneström, *Die Schriften Eulers chronologisch nach den Jahren geordnet, in denen sie verfaßt worden sind*, Jahresbericht der Deutschen Mathematiker-Vereinigung (Teubner, Leipzig, 1913).
- [48] L. Euler, De seriebus divergentibus, *Novi Commentarii Academiae Scientiarum Petropolitanae* **5**, 205–237 (1760); reprinted in *Opera Omnia*, ser. 1, vol. 14, pp. 585–617. [Latin original and English and German translations available at <http://eulerarchive.maa.org/pages/E247.html>]

- [49] L. Euler, De transformatione seriei divergentis $1 - mx + m(m+n)x^2 - m(m+n)(m+2n)x^3 + \text{etc.}$ in fractionem continuam, *Nova Acta Academiae Scientiarum Imperialis Petropolitanae* **2**, 36–45 (1788); reprinted in *Opera Omnia*, ser. 1, vol. 16, pp. 34–46. [Latin original and English and German translations available at <http://eulerarchive.maa.org/pages/E616.html>]
- [50] S.M. Fallat and C.R. Johnson, *Totally Nonnegative Matrices* (Princeton University Press, Princeton NJ, 2011).
- [51] P. Flajolet, Combinatorial aspects of continued fractions, *Discrete Math.* **32**, 125–161 (1980).
- [52] P. Flajolet, On congruences and continued fractions for some classical combinatorial quantities, *Discrete Math.* **41**, 145–153 (1982).
- [53] P. Flajolet and R. Sedgewick, *Analytic Combinatorics* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2009).
- [54] S. Fomin, Loop-erased walks and total positivity, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.* **353**, 3563–3583 (2001).
- [55] S. Fomin, Total positivity and cluster algebras, in *Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians*, vol. II, edited by R. Bhatia, A. Pal, G. Rangarajan, V. Srinivas and M. Vanninathan (Hindustan Book Agency, New Delhi, 2010), pp. 125–145.
- [56] S. Fomin, L. Williams and A. Zelevinsky, *Introduction to Cluster Algebras*, forthcoming book; preliminary draft of Chapters 1–5 posted at arXiv:1608.05735 [math.CO] and arXiv:1707.07190 [math.CO] at arXiv.org.
- [57] S. Fomin and A. Zelevinsky, Double Bruhat cells and total positivity, *J. Amer. Math. Soc.* **12**, 335–380 (1999).
- [58] S. Fomin and A. Zelevinsky, Total positivity: tests and parametrizations, *Math. Intelligencer* **22**, no. 1, 23–33 (2000).
- [59] J. Françon, Histoires de fichiers, *RAIRO Informat. Théor.* **12**, 49–62 (1978).
- [60] E. Frank, A new class of continued fraction expansions for the ratios of hypergeometric functions, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.* **81**, 453–476 (1956).
- [61] E. Fusy and E. Guitter, Comparing two statistical ensembles of quadrangulations: A continued fraction approach, *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré D* **4**, 125–176 (2017).
- [62] F.R. Gantmacher and M.G. Krein, *Oscillation Matrices and Kernels and Small Vibrations of Mechanical Systems* (AMS Chelsea Publishing, Providence RI, 2002). Based on the second Russian edition, 1950.

- [63] F. Gantmakher and M. Krein, Sur les matrices complètement non négatives et oscillatoires, *Compositio Math.* **4**, 445–476 (1937).
- [64] M. Gasca and C.A. Micchelli, eds., *Total Positivity and its Applications* (Kluwer, Dordrecht, 1996).
- [65] G. Gasper and M. Rahman, *Basic Hypergeometric Series*, 2nd ed. (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge–New York, 2004).
- [66] C.F. Gauss, Disquisitiones generales circa seriem infinitam $1 + \frac{\alpha\beta}{1\cdot\gamma}x + \frac{\alpha(\alpha+1)\beta(\beta+1)}{1\cdot 2\cdot\gamma(\gamma+1)}xx + \frac{\alpha(\alpha+1)(\alpha+2)\beta(\beta+1)(\beta+2)}{1\cdot 2\cdot 3\cdot\gamma(\gamma+1)(\gamma+2)}x^3 + \text{etc.}$, *Commentationes Societatis Regiae Scientiarum Gottingensis Recentiores, Classis Mathematicae* **2** (1813). [Reprinted in C.F. Gauss, *Werke*, vol. 3 (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2011), pp. 123–162.]
- [67] I. Gessel, A note on Stirling permutations, unpublished manuscript, August 1978, cited in [113].
- [68] I. Gessel, private communication, 27 May 2015.
- [69] I.M. Gessel, Lagrange inversion, *J. Combin. Theory A* **144**, 212–249 (2016).
- [70] I.M. Gessel and S. Seo, A refinement of Cayley’s formula for trees, *Electron. J. Combin.* **11**, no. 2, #R27 (2006).
- [71] I. Gessel and R.P. Stanley, Stirling polynomials, *J. Combin. Theory A* **24**, 24–33 (1978).
- [72] I.M. Gessel and X.G. Viennot, Determinants, paths, and plane partitions, Brandeis University preprint (1989). Available on-line at <http://people.brandeis.edu/~gessel/homepage/papers/> or <http://xavierviennot.org/xavier/articles.html>
- [73] I.P. Goulden and D.M. Jackson, *Combinatorial Enumeration* (Wiley, New York, 1983). Reprinted by Dover, Mineola NY, 2004.
- [74] D. Gouyou-Beauchamps, Construction of q -equations for convex polyominoes, paper presented at 10th International Conference on Formal Power Series and Algebraic Combinatorics (FPSAC ’98), available on-line at <http://www-igm.univ-mlv.fr/~fpsac/FPSAC98/articles.html>
- [75] R.L. Graham, D.E. Knuth and O. Patashnik, *Concrete Mathematics: A Foundation for Computer Science*, 2nd ed. (Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass., 1994).
- [76] B. Hackl, C. Heuberger and H. Prodinger, Ascents in non-negative lattice paths, preprint, arXiv:1801.02996 [math.CO] at arXiv.org.
- [77] J. Haglund and M. Visontai, Stable multivariate Eulerian polynomials and generalized Stirling permutations, *European J. Combin.* **33**, 477–487 (2012).

- [78] M.D. Haiman, Conjectures on the quotient ring by diagonal invariants, *J. Algebraic Combin.* **3**, 17–76 (1994).
- [79] T.-X. He, Matrix characterizations of Riordan arrays, *Lin. Alg. Appl.* **465**, 15–42 (2015).
- [80] E. Heine, Untersuchungen über die Reihe $1 + \frac{(1-q^\alpha)(1-q^\beta)}{(1-q)(1-q^\gamma)} \cdot x + \frac{(1-q^\alpha)(1-q^{\alpha+1})(1-q^\beta)(1-q^{\beta+1})}{(1-q)(1-q^2)(1-q^\gamma)(1-q^{\gamma+1})} \cdot x^2 + \dots$, *J. reine angew. Math.* **34**, 285–328 (1847). Available on-line at <http://www.digizeitschriften.de/main/dms/img/?PPN=GDZPPN002145758>
- [81] O. Holtz, Hermite–Biehler, Routh–Hurwitz, and total positivity, *Lin. Alg. Appl.* **372**, 105–110 (2003).
- [82] S. Janson, M. Kuba and A. Panholzer, Generalized Stirling permutations, families of increasing trees and urn models, *J. Combin. Theory A* **118**, 94–114 (2011).
- [83] W.B. Jones and W.J. Thron, *Continued Fractions: Analytic Theory and Applications* (Addison-Wesley, Reading MA, 1980).
- [84] M. Josuat-Vergès, A q -analog of Schläfli and Gould identities on Stirling numbers, *Ramanujan J.* **46**, 483–507 (2018).
- [85] S. Karlin, *Total Positivity* (Stanford University Press, Stanford CA, 1968).
- [86] S. Karlin and J. McGregor, Coincidence probabilities, *Pacific J. Math.* **9**, 1141–1164 (1959).
- [87] J.H.B. Kemperman, A Hurwitz matrix is totally positive, *SIAM J. Math. Anal.* **13**, 331–341 (1982).
- [88] A.N. Khovanskii, *The Application of Continued Fractions and their Generalizations to Problems in Approximation Theory*, translated from the Russian by P. Wynn (Noordhoff, Groningen, 1963).
- [89] D.E. Knuth, *The Art of Computer Programming*, vol. 3, 2nd ed. (Addison-Wesley, Reading MA, 1998).
- [90] C. Krattenthaler, A systematic list of two- and three-term contiguous relations for basic hypergeometric series, posted 25 August 2002, <http://www.mat.univie.ac.at/~kratt/artikel/contrel.ps.gz>
- [91] C. Krattenthaler, HYP [Manual for the MATHEMATICA package HYP], posted 20 September 2003, http://www.mat.univie.ac.at/~kratt/hyp_hypq/hypm.pdf

- [92] G. Kreweras, Sur les partitions non croisées d'un cycle, *Discrete Math.* **1**, 333–350 (1972).
- [93] M. Kuba and A.L. Varvak, On path diagrams and Stirling permutations, preprint, arXiv:0906.1672v2 [math.CO] at arXiv.org.
- [94] T.Y. Lam, An introduction to real algebra, *Rocky Mountain J. Math.* **14**, 767–814 (1984).
- [95] J.H. Lambert, Mémoire sur quelques propriétés remarquables des quantités transcendentes circulaires et logarithmiques, *Mémoires de l'Académie Royale des Sciences de Berlin* **17**, 265–322 (1768). Available on-line at <http://www.kuttaka.org/~JHL/L1768b.html>
- [96] R. Lenczewski and R. Sałapata, Multivariate Fuss-Narayana polynomials and their application to random matrices, *Electron. J. Combin.* **20**, no. 2, article #P41 (2013).
- [97] H. Liang, L. Mu and Y. Wang, Catalan-like numbers and Stieltjes moment sequences, *Discrete Math.* **339**, 484–488 (2016).
- [98] B. Lindström, On the vector representations of induced matroids, *Bull. London Math. Soc.* **5**, 85–90 (1973).
- [99] M. Lis, The planar Ising model and total positivity, *J. Stat. Phys.* **166**, 72–89 (2017).
- [100] L. Lorentzen and H. Waadeland, *Continued Fractions with Applications* (North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1992).
- [101] M. Lothaire, *Combinatorics on Words*, 2nd ed. (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1997).
- [102] G. Lusztig, Total positivity in reductive groups, in *Lie Theory and Geometry*, edited by J.-L. Brylinski, R. Brylinski, V. Guillemin and V. Kac (Birkhäuser Boston, Boston MA, 1994), pp. 531–568.
- [103] G. Lusztig, Introduction to total positivity, in *Positivity in Lie Theory: Open Problems*, edited by J. Hilgert, J.D. Lawson, K.-H. Neeb and E.B. Vinberg (de Gruyter, Berlin, 1998), pp. 133–145.
- [104] G. Lusztig, A survey of total positivity, *Milan J. Math.* **76**, 125–134 (2008).
- [105] I.G. Macdonald, *Symmetric Functions and Hall Polynomials*, 2nd ed. (Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1995).
- [106] M. Marshall, *Positive Polynomials and Sums of Squares*, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs #146 (American Mathematical Society, Providence RI, 2008).
- [107] W. Młotkowski, Probability measures corresponding to Aval numbers, *Colloq. Math.* **129**, 189–202 (2012).

- [108] L. Mu, J. Mao and Y. Wang, Row polynomial matrices of Riordan arrays, *Lin. Alg. Appl.* **522**, 1–14 (2017).
- [109] A. Nica and R. Speicher, *Lectures on the Combinatorics of Free Probability*, London Mathematical Society Lecture Note Series #335 (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2006).
- [110] The On-Line Encyclopedia of Integer Sequences, published electronically at <http://oeis.org>
- [111] R. Oste and J. Van der Jeugt, Motzkin paths, Motzkin polynomials and recurrence relations, *Electron. J. Combin.* **22**, no. 2, #P2.8 (2015).
- [112] R. Pan, Algorithmic solution to Problem 1 (and linear extensions of general one-level grid-like posets), <http://www.math.ucsd.edu/~projectp/problems/p1.html> (24 February 2015) and <http://www.math.ucsd.edu/~projectp/problems/solutions/OneLevelGridPoset.pdf> (28 June 2016).
- [113] S.-K. Park, The r -multipermutations, *J. Combin. Theory A* **67**, 44–71 (1994).
- [114] S.-K. Park, Inverse descents of r -multipermutations, *Discrete Math.* **132**, 215–229 (1994).
- [115] P. Peart and W.-J. Woan, Generating functions via Hankel and Stieltjes matrices, *J. Integer Seq.* **3**, article 00.2.1 (2000).
- [116] O. Perron, *Die Lehre von den Kettenbrüchen* (Teubner, Leipzig, 1913). Second edition: Teubner, Leipzig, 1929; reprinted by Chelsea, New York, 1950. Third edition, 2 vols.: Teubner, Stuttgart, 1954, 1957.
- [117] T.K. Petersen, *Eulerian Numbers* (Birkhäuser–Springer, New York–Heidelberg, 2015).
- [118] M. Pétréolle and A.D. Sokal, Three-term contiguous relations for all generalized hypergeometric functions ${}_rF_s$ and basic hypergeometric functions ${}_r\phi_s$, in preparation.
- [119] A. Pinkus, *Totally Positive Matrices* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2010).
- [120] J. Pitman, *Combinatorial Stochastic Processes* (Ecole d’Eté de Probabilités de Saint-Flour XXIII – 2002), Lecture Notes in Mathematics #1875 (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2006).
- [121] A. Prestel and C.N. Delzell, *Positive Polynomials: From Hilbert’s 17th Problem to Real Algebra* (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2001).
- [122] H. Prodinger, Returns, hills, and t -ary trees, *J. Integer Seq.* **19**, article 16.7.2 (2016), 8 pp.

- [123] E.D. Rainville, *Special Functions* (Macmillan, New York, 1960).
- [124] K.G. Ramanathan, Hypergeometric series and continued fractions, Proc. Indian Acad. Sci. (Math. Sci.) **97**, 277–296 (1987).
- [125] A. Rattan, Parking functions and related combinatorial structures, Ph.D. thesis, University of Waterloo (2014).
- [126] E. Roblet, Une interprétation combinatoire des approximants de Padé, Thèse de doctorat, Université Bordeaux I (1994). Reprinted as Publications du Laboratoire de Combinatoire et d’Informatique Mathématique (LACIM) #17, Université du Québec à Montréal (1994). Available on-line at <http://lacim.uqam.ca/en/les-parutions/>
- [127] E. Roblet and X.G. Viennot, Théorie combinatoire des T-fractions et approximants de Padé en deux points, Discrete Math. **153**, 271–288 (1996).
- [128] S. Roman, *An Introduction to Catalan Numbers* (Birkhäuser–Springer, Cham–Heidelberg–New York, 2015).
- [129] B. Salvy and P. Zimmermann, Gfun: a Maple package for the manipulation of generating and holonomic functions in one variable, ACM Trans. Math. Software **20**, 163–177 (1994).
- [130] K. Schmüdgen, *The Moment Problem* (Springer, Cham, 2017).
- [131] I.J. Schoenberg and A. Whitney, On Pólya frequency functions. III. The positivity of translation determinants with an application to the interpolation problem by spline curves, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **74**, 246–259 (1953).
- [132] L.W. Shapiro, S. Getu, W.J. Woan and L.C. Woodson, The Riordan group, Discrete Appl. Math. **34**, 229–239 (1991).
- [133] J. Shareshian and M.L. Wachs, Eulerian quasisymmetric functions, Adv. Math. **225**, 2921–2966 (2010).
- [134] J.A. Shohat and J.D. Tamarkin, *The Problem of Moments* (American Mathematical Society, New York, 1943).
- [135] R. Simion, Noncrossing partitions, Discrete Math. **217**, 367–409 (2000).
- [136] B. Simon, The classical moment problem as a self-adjoint finite difference operator, Adv. Math. **137**, 82–203 (1998).
- [137] M. Skandera, Introductory notes on total positivity (June 2003), available at <http://www.math.lsa.umich.edu/~fomin/565/intp.ps>
- [138] L.J. Slater, *Generalized Hypergeometric Functions* (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1966).

- [139] A.D. Sokal, Coefficientwise total positivity (via continued fractions) for some Hankel matrices of combinatorial polynomials, talk at the Séminaire de Combinatoire Philippe Flajolet, Institut Henri Poincaré, Paris, 5 June 2014; transparencies available at <http://semflajolet.math.cnrs.fr/index.php/Main/2013-2014>
- [140] A.D. Sokal, Coefficientwise total positivity (via continued fractions) for some Hankel matrices of combinatorial polynomials, in preparation.
- [141] A.D. Sokal, unpublished, May 2015.
- [142] A.D. Sokal, A simple algorithm for expanding a power series as a continued fraction, in preparation.
- [143] A.D. Sokal and J. Zeng, Some multivariate master polynomials for permutations, set partitions, and perfect matchings, and their continued fractions, in preparation.
- [144] C. Song, The generalized Schröder theory, *Electron. J. Combin.* **12**, paper #R53 (2005), 10 pp.
- [145] R. Speicher, Multiplicative functions on the lattice of noncrossing partitions and free convolution, *Math. Ann.* **298**, 611–628 (1994).
- [146] R. Sprugnoli, Riordan arrays and combinatorial sums, *Discrete Math.* **132**, 267–290 (1994).
- [147] R.P. Stanley, *Enumerative Combinatorics*, vol. 1 (Wadsworth & Brooks/Cole, Monterey, California, 1986). Reprinted by Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- [148] R.P. Stanley, Parking functions and noncrossing partitions, *Electron. J. Combin.* **4**, no. 2, paper #R20 (1997), 14 pp.
- [149] R.P. Stanley, *Enumerative Combinatorics*, vol. 2 (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge–New York, 1999).
- [150] R.P. Stanley, *Catalan Numbers* (Cambridge University Press, New York, 2015).
- [151] R.P. Stanley and Y. Wang, Some aspects of (r, k) -parking functions, *J. Combin. Theory A* **159**, 54–78 (2018).
- [152] J.R. Stembridge, Immanants of totally positive matrices are nonnegative, *Bull. London Math. Soc.* **23**, 422–428 (1991).
- [153] T.J. Stieltjes, Sur la réduction en fraction continue d’une série procédant selon les puissances descendantes d’une variable, *Ann. Fac. Sci. Toulouse* **3**, H1–H17 (1889).

- [154] T.J. Stieltjes, Recherches sur les fractions continues, Ann. Fac. Sci. Toulouse **8**, J1–J122 (1894) and **9**, A1–A47 (1895). [Reprinted, together with an English translation, in T.J. Stieltjes, *Œuvres Complètes/Collected Papers* (Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1993), vol. II, pp. 401–566 and 609–745.]
- [155] E. Thoma, Die unzerlegbaren, positiv-definiten Klassenfunktionen der abzählbar unendlichen, symmetrischen Gruppe, Math. Z. **85**, 40–61 (1964).
- [156] A.L. Varvak, Encoding properties of lattice paths, Ph.D. thesis, Brandeis University, May 2004. Available on-line at <http://people.brandeis.edu/~gessel/homepage/students/varvakthesis.pdf>
- [157] G. Viennot, Une théorie combinatoire des polynômes orthogonaux généraux, Notes de conférences données à l’Université du Québec à Montréal, septembre-octobre 1983. Available on-line at http://www.xavierviennot.org/xavier/polynomes_orthogonaux.html
- [158] M. Visontai, Some remarks on the joint distribution of descents and inverse descents, Electron. J. Combin. **20**, no. 1, paper #P52 (2013).
- [159] H.S. Wall, *Analytic Theory of Continued Fractions* (Van Nostrand, New York, 1948). Reprinted by the American Mathematical Society, Providence RI, 2000.
- [160] Wikipedia, Gauss’s continued fraction, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gauss%27s_continued_fraction
- [161] W.-J. Woan, Hankel matrices and lattice paths, J. Integer Seq. **4**, article 01.1.2 (2001).
- [162] C.H. Yan, Parking functions, in *Handbook of Enumerative Combinatorics*, edited by M. Bona (CRC Press, Boca Raton FL, 2015), pp. 835–893.
- [163] B.-X. Zhu, Log-convexity and strong q -log-convexity for some triangular arrays, Adv. Appl. Math. **50**, 595–606 (2013).
- [164] B.-X. Zhu, Some positivities in certain triangular arrays, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. **142**, 2943–2952 (2014).
- [165] B.-X. Zhu, Log-concavity and strong q -log-convexity for Riordan arrays and recursive matrices, Proc. Roy. Soc. Edinburgh A **147**, 1297–1310 (2017).
- [166] B.-X. Zhu, Total positivity, continued fractions and Stieltjes moment sequences, in preparation.